

MICHAEL J. LAPIERRE
& SARAH R. WALLACE

CONVERGENCE
IN SOUTH
CAROLINA
POLITICS

ALIGNING OUR PASSION
AND PURPOSE

MICHAEL J. LAPIERRE

A Patriot Manifesto: Convergence in SC
Politics

Aligning Our Passion & Purpose

kindle | direct
publishing

First published by Kindle Direct Publishing 2021

Copyright © 2021 by Michael J. LaPierre

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise without written permission from the publisher. It is illegal to copy this book, post it to a website, or distribute it by any other means without permission.

Michael J. LaPierre has no responsibility for the persistence or accuracy of URLs for external or third-party Internet Websites referred to in this publication and does not guarantee that any content on such Websites is, or will remain, accurate or appropriate.

First edition

ISBN: 9798598345504

Cover art by Sarah R. Wallace

This book was professionally typeset on Reedsy.

Find out more at reedsy.com

To the Reader:

All references to marxism, leninism, communism, progressivism, totalitarianism, socialism, democrat socialism, secular humanism, humanism, lgbtq, democrat party, equality act, common core, and any other progressive liberal ideology will be written about with small caps, on purpose.

Contents

<i>Foreword</i>	v
<i>Preface</i>	ix
<i>Acknowledgement</i>	xi
<i>Cover Description</i>	xiii
<i>Patriot Manifesto</i>	xv
Section I	1
FAITH: OUR FOUNDATION – Section I	2
A Shining City	4
Salt & Light	6
Protecting Religious Freedom	9
The Everlasting Foundations	11
Christian History - Not Lost or Forgotten	13
Having the Authority to Lead	16
Safeguarding Traditions	19
The If-Then Proposition	21
Unleashing Religious Freedom	25
Navigating Moments of Truth	27
Nehemiah’s Intuitions & Insights	29
Surround Yourself with Christian Heroes	33
Is There Anything Sacred?	37
Strategic Godlessness	40
The Gift Giver	43
Section II	47
POLICY: OUR FUNDAMENTALS – Section II	48
Respecting Life	50
Throwing Down the Gauntlet in Education	52
Education Reform and School Choice	58

Our 2nd Amendment Gun Rights	64
The Red Flag Con	66
Mitigating Gun Violence	70
Curbing Excessive Political Power	74
The Perils of Statist Ideology	76
democrat socialism = communism	78
Consider It Well- Hong Kong	82
Philanthropy That Leads to Apathy	85
Defeating the equality act	88
The SMART Energy Plan	90
Components of A Strong National Defense	93
Strengthening the Military	97
Securing Our National Borders	99
Legal Immigration	102
Simplifying the Tax Code	104
Controlling the Class Bully	107
Free Market Healthcare	109
Stamping Out Corruption	112
Eliminating Iran's Nuclear Weapons	115
The Pro-Life Flip-Flop	117
The Global Warming Two-Step	119
Section III	122
POLITICS: OUR FERVOR – Section III	123
Our Campaign Pledge	125
Redefinition of a U.S. Senator	129
A Renewal of the S.C Republican Party	131
The Nullification Strategy	136
Reframing True Conservatism	139
Political Drift	142
The Winds of Change	145
The Art of Sophistry	147
The Primary Process	149
When Party Disciplines Rule	151

Speaking Truth to Power	157
Fairness & Freedom	161
An Unconverted Political Leadership Class	163
The Republican Party Platform vs. Quasi-Republicans	166
Understanding Political Viability	169
A Problem-Solving Businessman	172
The Politicization of Mass Shootings	175
The Anarchist Next Door	179
Common Ground Not Compromise	182
Section IV	184
AMERICA: THE BEAUTIFUL – Section IV	185
Morality & Religious Sentiment	187
Acknowledging Supremacy	189
Our Civic Responsibility	192
Our Culture	197
Our Puritan Forefathers	201
A Blessed Nation	204
Two Political Realities	206
The Current Political Sandbox	208
Creating a New Political Sandbox	212
From the Pulpit	216
The Superhighway	220
The Plan	222
God’s Moral Law	226
God’s Righteous Cause	228
Forgotten Quotes	230
Christian Activism	233
Section V	235
CURRENT EVENTS: THE HERE & NOW – Section V	236
The Coronavirus Strategy	238
Coronavirus- Slow & Steady	240
The COVID-19 Umbrella Model	243
Eyes Wide Open	245

The Miracle of May	247
The Vital Nature of Conservative Judges	251
Big Media Baiting the Masses	257
Ram & Jam Politics	263
An Open Letter to Preachers Across America	266
Is Mr. Smith Going to Washington...Again?	271
What do We do Now?	273
Decertification of Electorates	275
A Most Unfortunate Prediction	280
A Citizens Primary Responsibility	284
Making Sense of it All	286
The Last Stand	291
Conclusion	294
Afterword	295
<i>About the Editor/Designer</i>	296
<i>About the Author</i>	297
<i>Also by Michael J. LaPierre</i>	298

Foreword

Running for the U.S. Senate in the beautiful state of South Carolina was an honor and a privilege that our team will not soon forget. Team LaPierre believes that our efforts were a much-needed contribution to the conservative discourse in our state. We also feel that our campaign efforts were a defining experience of a lifetime and a learning/growth opportunity all at the same time.

This book is a memoir of our specific experiences on the campaign trail that will open your eyes to faith, policy, and politics in South Carolina. What a blessing it was to campaign for the U.S. Senate seat and meet the wonderful people of South Carolina. For over a year and a half, we were given a supernatural desire to proclaim a faith-based message in the political arena at the highest levels. We knew that our calling was sure, regardless of what seemed to be insurmountable odds by human standards.

We were told time and again that we couldn't win and that we shouldn't waste our time, energy, talents, and money. The negative counsel, redirect, discouragement, and scolding by some did not deter us from heeding the call of God. In a sense, we were called to a short-term mission's opportunity in the body politic and it was thrilling! However, please make no mistake in your assumptions about our campaign mission. We were also given the desire to "win" the Republican Party primary for the United States Senate.

Our duty was to convince South Carolinians that we needed to recommit and align our political thinking back to the fundamental roots of our Founding Fathers where Godly principles, standards, and worldviews prevailed. Furthermore, we felt compelled to awaken people of faith to the secular humanist indoctrination and decision-making going on in our government and culture. At the end of our U.S. Senate campaign, Team

LaPierre felt like we had won a decisive victory. It may not have been a political victory, but one that pricked the hearts of almost eighty thousand South Carolinian voters. A tremendous jumping-off point to be sure for any future campaign run!

Yes, we were competing against a three-term Senator who was coming off a resounding political victory and much notoriety (Justice Brett Kavanaugh's confirmation). We were also trying to navigate the full onslaught of the Covid-19 lockdown requirements while spreading a conservative and faith-based message across our state. None of these challenges went unnoticed by our campaign team, but it did not matter.

Lastly, because we were new to the South Carolina political ranks, we were not readily accepted. This was the part of the campaign that was the most surprising and frustrating to our team. While we knew it would happen, we did not think it would happen to the extreme and the extent that it did (more on this in the politics section). To be fully transparent, we were ostracized from many party meetings and not given any real platform/opportunity to showcase our conservative values, policies, and future legislative initiatives within party ranks. The message being sent was that we were NOT one of the "good ole boys/girls" and were told to get in the back of the line. As we will discuss in the politics section of this book, we were facing a political machine that went into hyperdrive while contending with many in GOP leadership trying to choke down our messaging and name recognition. It is our opinion that this methodology happened at the expense of a free, fair, legitimate, and democratic primary process. But, then again, it's politics!

Ultimately, we wanted to see dramatic progress in South Carolina and across our nation where faith, policy, and politics converged. While we understood that the specific action plan that we crafted, articulated, and wrote about would take decades to implement, we were unafraid to take on this daunting task. To be clear, our team had no desire during this campaign to promote the establishment of a state-sponsored church as part of our political objectives. No, we only wanted people of faith to be able to freely exercise their religious beliefs both in private and in public while pushing a conservative agenda.

Religious beliefs can change people at their core, but their political ideology does not. Painting people of faith inside the four corners of a church building who run for public office or work in the public sector is not what our Founding Fathers envisioned. They were trying to protect the church from the tyranny of government and not the other way around. Our team believes that the First Amendment adequately encapsulates their true desires. We hope that this book takes you on a journey that awakens your faith, worldviews, and political consciousness to the point of action.

Our country needs people of faith and others who esteem conservative values sacred to our founding principles to step up and get involved. The chapters shared in this book are opinions only. Our intent is not to cast dispersion on the character of any individual(s), only to aggressively point out the error of their ways when their decision-making and policy positions conflict with “true” conservative values, the Republican Party platform, or the United States Constitution. The decision-making, policy positions, and elements of compromise to conservative principles will be hotly and thoroughly contested in the chapters of this book. We will also point out any inconsistencies and the duplicitous nature of a politician’s thinking and decision-making when they try to argue both sides of the same issue for political expediency. We expect them to drive a stake deep in the ground and represent all of the Republican Party platform and its core principles, whether convenient at the time or not.

We believe at different times in the lives of Christians that God stirs us up “in wisdom” to accomplish things that we would never have been capable of doing on our own! Through His guiding hands, we sit back, take stock, and realize in amazement that the fruits of our labors were conditional to Divine presence and intervention. In Exodus 35:20-35, we see the willing heart first, and then, the supernatural blessing to achieve.

While we are in no way suggesting a parallel to the inspired Word of God, but instead, recognize the grace of God evident in the undertaking of specific events. God uses men (Exodus 31:1-6) and women (Exodus 35:25) beyond all earthly capabilities and reasoning. We believe that this manuscript is such a demonstration and we place it to the glory of His name. It is God’s doing and

not our own! In the flesh, this would never have been possible. However, in the spirit all things are possible. (Matthew 19:26)

The book title, subtitle, sections, and chapter sequencing are done with the utmost care, deliberation, and forethought. Each chapter represents either an article written, speech delivered, opinion editorial penned, blog post, historical reflection, or some critical political event/circumstance that supports a conservative viewpoint based on our team's faith, policy, and politics. May God bless you!

– Michael J. LaPierre

Preface

This book is many things. This book is a documentation of our run for a political office that many believed to be unachievable (and proof that an “outsider” could do well); it is an outpouring of our deeply-held beliefs that the Founding Fathers had a divine calling to give words to liberty and feet to freedom; it is a clarion call to conservatives to re-ignite their passion for the cause; and most importantly, it is a charge to Christians to involve themselves in civic duties as part of their worldview. There is so much that could be said about our desire to see American citizens consider their civic duties not just ones of toting party lines, begrudgingly voting or complaining for lack of change, but rather of thinking outside the two-party system (that our Founders warned us about long ago), dusting off their pocket Constitutions and standing up in communities to teach younger generations the importance of government’s framework.

It is our wholehearted desire that those reading this book will feel encouraged, excited, and compelled to become active in their communities, reclaim their lost love for our costly liberties and educate themselves on the issues of our day. Each generation has the opportunity to become involved in a momentous time in history. It is our fallen world that experiences oft-fought wars, economic waves, cultural trends, societal changes – for better or for worse. The question we have for you is- how will you participate? Often it feels banal to say, “we’re in a turning point in history” or “never has there been a better time for you to get involved.” Even one of my favorite sayings, “If not now, when?”, seems overused. Though it may feel moot to say one of these phrases, the reality remains that the gumption behind the phrase is valid- it IS important to stay involved.

My life motto from the patriot Edmund Burke is the core of why I believe

we should never tire of doing good. “The only thing necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing.” May it never be said of us that we did nothing. We have tens of thousands of supporters who believed in this motto and who joined us in stirring up the minds and pricking the hearts of conservatives in South Carolina. From the Lowcountry to the Upstate we met fellow patriots who said, “we will do something.” For that, we are forever grateful. This is just the beginning. Will you join us?

- Sarah R. Wallace

Acknowledgement

We would like to personally thank all of the volunteers and those who had a hand in pushing our campaign forward! Your enthusiasm, dedication, and passion for the cause was palpable. Each of you helped motivate our team to never-before-dreamed-of heights. Thank you so much! We also want to thank the almost 80,000 Republican Party primary voters who supported us with their vote. It is so refreshing to know that there is still a significant base of Ronald Reagan like conservatives and patriots who were ready for change. Please stay in touch and follow our progress.

The alphabetical list below (by last name) is just a few of those dedicated individuals who made a significant difference. If you played a key role in our campaign and we failed to mention you, please forgive us. We tried reaching out to everyone that we could think of.

- Drew Adams
- Adam Ballew
- Larry Barnett
- Thomas Beach
- Randy Clem
- Daniel Cochran
- Jamison and Lee Ann Collins
- Don and Judy Crain
- Mike and Merri Darling
- Tom Dunn
- Michael Elder
- Dave Eldridge

- Jim Evans
- Paul Gorski
- Dan Harvell
- Toni Catani-Haynes
- Douglas Hillman
- Randy Jones
- Trace Kellett
- Nathan Koppe
- Rayne Koppe
- Verity Koppe
- Trey Lemmons
- Mark & Sarah Lynch
- Wesley Martin
- Fred Parkell
- Jonathan Kane Peele
- Michael Reed
- Henry Ridge
- Dave Rowley
- Susan Sanders
- Tim Schuyler

“If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?” (Psalm 11-3)

Cover Description

It is our hope that you will see the delicate intricacies, complexities, and responsibilities involved in running for the high office and elected position of U.S. Senator on the front cover of this book. We believe that this cover encapsulates all of the vital elements and considerations toward this endeavor.

First, our team believes in the significance of the Bible as the needed hedge of protection and pillar of strength to occupy every aspect of our governance (and this campaign). It is placed at the bottom to suggest the vital “cornerstone” inflection and essence of our entire manuscript.

Second, the wooden partitions that are positioned as a backdrop, represent the common human decency and patriotic motives of the people of South Carolina. Using an earthy design, our intent is to express a willingness by the South Carolina citizenry to be the salt and light needed in our society. They are a down-to-earth and no-holds-barred group of folks (enthusiastic), who we greatly cherish and applaud. Ultimately, it signifies a “We the People” orientation that has purposeful intent.

Third, the American flags and all their significance must proudly stand out to promote the allegiance that they truly deserve. The allegiance to the American flag and our Constitutional Republic can only be grasped and appreciated in its proper context- under God. Yes, we hope that those who read this book will understand the depth of our patriotism and conviction of obedience to Him that reigns supreme.

Fourth, the capitol building itself demonstrates the formal, stately, and sacred nature of governance that our Founding Fathers worked so tirelessly to preserve. Their intent was to conserve the best that humanity had to offer through the portal and vitality of moral and virtuous behavior. They believed that the “shock and awe” expressed in the architecture of our stately capitols

would humble those among us who would endeavor to do us great harm.

Fifth, the ornate design of those same buildings must not go unnoticed. As citizens of the United States of America, we must understand and appreciate the complexities associated with governing by the consent of the people. The formation of public policy and the ensuing politics is uniquely covered in the pages of this book. We feel that such intricate designs are wholly representative of the nuances experienced in the Legislative, Executive, and Judicial branches of government as they craft, execute and validate the laws of our land. Lastly, the superimposition of each of the above on the front cover leads us to the overarching theme of this book. We believe that the convergence of our faith, policy, and politics was highly evident in our campaign for the United States Senate. That, my fellow patriots, is the significance of our front cover. God bless you!

Patriot Manifesto

Does the rupture of my conscience away from embracing the establishment policies of both the left and the right demand that I seek the relief, refuge, and asylum of a more favorable and equitable environment? In other words, am I so dissatisfied with the status quo of my current political party that I am motivated to look elsewhere? Those are the questions that millions of Americans are asking themselves and wrestling with right now. Have the ruling elite and the professional political operatives in today's political establishment class, co-opted their respective parties to the point where their party platforms are now irrelevant? At a minimum, do we believe that their respective platforms are severely watered down, muddied, altered, and nothing more than ornament on the shelf?

Much like our Founding Fathers who had the long view of history when designing the Constitution, we too, have had the long and tiresome view of establishment politics down through the ages and all that it affords. It is my belief that outside of a major "cleansing from within" (toward a more conservative, principled, and action-oriented party membership), we will have more of the same moving forward. Does anyone really think that the establishment class will move to lessen their grip on total and complete power? Absolutely not! This leads me to "A PATRIOT MANIFESTO" which throws down the gauntlet of why creating and joining an alternative third-party may be a viable and prudent option. Remember, our Founding Fathers did not like the established and dominant current two-party system.

The Deliberation:

Before embarking on the foundational elements of A PATRIOT MANIFESTO, I want to deliberately think through all of the potential ramifications

of such an effort. I have been diligently praying about whether or not to get involved with the formation of a new political party. Besides seeking the counsel of others, I also thought that putting the pros and cons down on paper would help crystalize our thinking on this weighty task.

Pros:

- Allows us to be salt and light in a new political party
- Reorients our priorities back to God, family, church, and country
- Elevates the principles of faith-based reasoning and logic in governance
- Fosters the conditions for a more conservative party platform in line with the original intent of our Founders
- Allows true patriots to get out from under the establishment's policies and politics from the current two-party system and find a legitimate home
 - Capitalizes on the patriotic sentiment, enthusiasm, and fervor now sweeping our country
 - Expands the base of informed and educated citizens in matters of public policy
 - Persuades apolitical citizens to become involved
 - Strengthens the resolve (the “what doesn't kill us will make us stronger” mantra) of other political parties to get better acquainted with the needs of the citizenry (We the People)
 - Opens up additional opportunities (with increased responsibility) for citizens to serve in a public capacity
 - Gives joy and excitement to those helping to create something new
 - Allows the power of thought and creative public policy to reign over establishment party priorities

Cons:

- Potential for elevated levels of infighting, thus, hurting the cause of Christ
- May give an undecided advantage to the Democrat Party in elections and legislation passed in the short term
 - Potential to cause accelerated division among conservatives weakening the long-term effectiveness of all

- Big media uses the new party to drive a propaganda wedge among conservatives
- The pillars of our government become further weakened to the point where our Constitution is put on the shelf and referred to in the abstract
- Potential for religious freedom to be redefined into the four walls of a church building

By comparison, it almost appears that the ultimate ends of each scenario are the same. The first (leave the Republican Party) allows for the excitement, joy, and safe harbor for like minds and passion on the front end, but with the unintended consequences of reducing the power and influence of both the Republican and Patriot parties to nominal impact, at best. In other words, a much quicker pace to a secularized (anti-God) society. The second, a slow and agonizing death toward those same secular (anti-God) conditions through the appeasement policies of the establishment Republicans. This would be a very slow burn indeed.

However, the big unknown in all this is how American politics would adjust in the long-term if there were three legitimate political parties. Could this have the impact of normalizing the eccentricities, extremes, and vitriol of our two-party system toward a more centrist orientation under a three-party system? Remember, each party wants to gain power and often moves to the middle to do so! If that is the case, does this support our Framers' original intention of having a "slow-moving" government? Does this support a coalition approach to government that serves the better interests of all Americans and/or does this usher in the total and complete secularization of our government similar to our European allies?

These are tough questions to answer and even tougher decisions to make. The bottom line is this: we want to pull the Republican Party further right and so far, they are unwilling to come. How long will we put up with the seemingly incurable malady of the establishment before bolting? Only time and the conditions of our public policy, rule of law, and adherence to our Constitution will tell. That, true patriots, is the ultimate litmus test to our questions!

The Platform Considerations:

I would like to first lay down the key and vital anchors that will unify our cause. That anchor (party platform recommendations) is listed in the initial three bullet points below. I also believe that additional clarification will be needed within a set of defined rules of engagement to enhance our patriot vision. The devil is most certainly in the details.

1. There must be agreement that God is sovereign and that He has permitted the current POLITICAL events of government for wise and holy ends.

If we can collectively wrap our minds around this fundamental principle, we will have enormous success in fulfilling the potential calling to establish a viable and powerful third-party alternative. Has God allowed the current political conditions in our country or not? The answer to this question is straight-up. It's either yes or no! While I am not excluding anyone from participating in the PATRIOT movement who would want to help "bust-up" establishment policies, there must be a baseline of agreement and understanding in our platform before moving forward. Bottom line, we are doing this for a higher power and reasons beyond ourselves, that exclude our own self-satisfying, self-aggrandizing, and self-preserving (get reelected) ends. If you claim to be a true PATRIOT and then set forth to reason and act outside the parameters of Divine Providence and intervention, you will create much confusion in our ranks.

2. We must endeavor to redefine the relationship between Church and State.

Key to our movement is the fundamental belief that the roles and responsibilities of each (Church and State) are different, but complementary in nature. They should not and were never intended by our founding fathers to be separated in the ways that modern case law has ruled and subsequently expressed in their legal opinions. The litany of case law in America on both Separation of Church and State and religious freedom has been established on false foundations through misguided (knowingly

or unknowingly) interpretations. It is the responsibility of the government to allow religion and religious beliefs without partiality. We must never let a pervasive government presence (secularism) crowd out the principles of religious freedom and liberty of conscience. We disagree with the modern adaptation of the Separation of Church and State theory.

3. We must believe that religious freedom as defined in our Constitution should be interpreted based on original intent.

Thomas Jefferson, one of our early American patriots who believed in limited government, states' rights, and the unalienable rights given to us by our Creator said, "Almighty God hath created the mind free and government coercion in the religious matters is a departure." Historians support the claim that our Framers believed that religious exemptions from generally applicable laws were allowable, if not explicit. Where have we gone wrong? The PATRIOT Party must encourage its elected officials to propose legislation in light of these facts. It was no mistake that religious freedom was the first right listed in our Bill of Rights. They knew that religion and virtue were necessary for a fully functioning and long-lasting government. Furthermore, our Founding Fathers believed that our government should provide oversight for, and be entangled with, the affairs of religious freedom. Allowing the secularists to fit the Constitution to our culture (the absence of moral standing and absolutes) was never the original intent of the Framers. We disagree with the "Lemon v. Kurtzman litmus test" for religious freedom now being used by many to adjudicate religious liberty that is secular (anti-God) in nature.

4. We defend and support the foundational pillars that undergird our Constitution and those that keep it strong.

- Life (anti-abortion), liberty (freedom from oppressive restrictions and regulation), and the pursuit of happiness/property (personal and economic prosperity)
- Freedom of Religion (both in private and in public venues)
- Limited Government (at both the Federal and State level)
- Rule of Law (enforcement)

- 2nd Amendment Gun Rights
- Free Speech
- Freedom of the Press
- Freedom to Assemble
- Freedom to Partition
- Due Process
- Privacy Rights
- States' Rights

We disagree with democrat socialism, socialism, communism, totalitarianism, secular humanism, and any other ism that takes us away from the founding principles expressed by the original intent of the Founding Fathers.

5. We have an America-first approach to our foreign policy.

We take a page out of President Andrew Jackson's playbook relating to our foreign policy. His foreign policy maxim stated, "Ask nothing but what is right, permit nothing that is wrong." While we want to encourage democracy and freedom around the world, we must never engage as the world police and entangle ourselves in the self-determination and sovereign rights of other nations. In other words, we protect American national security interests at all times, while honoring our commitments to our allies. If our current agreements with our allies need to be renegotiated and/or eliminated, then so be it. We expect our leaders to learn from the past, make course corrections when needed, but stand tall as a proud advocate of America and her heritage. We disagree that any President should embark on apology tours across the globe for any actions our government has taken to secure our individual liberties, freedoms, and unalienable rights.

6. We have an America-first approach to our military and our veterans.

We develop our military capability and readiness levels commensurate with being able to defend our citizenry at a moment's notice from all who might

do us harm. Peace through strength. Our veterans should be a top priority before (training), during (active duty), and after (veteran status) their military service to our country. We disagree with being an “equal partner” on the world stage.

7. We have an America-first approach to our economic policy.

We decouple ourselves from all foreign and domestic powers that hold untenable and disadvantageous economic and/or monopolistic power over our heads. i.e., China, Green New Deal, Big Tech, etc. We negotiate bi-lateral trade agreements that are in America’s best interests and those that move us toward heightened economic prosperity and free-market principles. We renegotiate any trade agreements that do not meet this objective. We do this with the wisdom, sensitivity, and understanding that “a rising tide lifts all boats.” We disagree with both globalism and radical environmentalism.

8. We have an America first approach to our fiscal policy.

Tax policy, the treatment of profits and other revenues, and government expenditure policies must support the notion of having a balanced budget. Therefore, any spending that would enlarge our national debt beyond our ability to pay is deemed detrimental to our national security interests and the future of our children and our grandchildren. We believe that a Balanced Budget Amendment to our Constitution should be passed. We disagree with deficit and runaway spending that bloats our national debt to irreversible levels.

9. We have an America first approach to our communication policy.

We desire to recommission America’s right to free speech back to earlier times where everyone could speak their minds without fear. Intimidation and brute force have no place in trying to harness, modify, or eliminate the views of others. We believe that absolute truth is vital in our communication with others and anything to the contrary should be immediately exposed and corrected. Our communication style should be seasoned with the wisdom and grace of God. We disagree with censorship and any other tactic (violence,

brute force, and other means of intimidation) that would silence or modify the voice of others.

10. We have an America-first approach to our system of education.

We must ensure that educators in the public sector provide a panoramic view of history and refrain from methods of secular humanist indoctrination. Our children must be exposed to the goodness that America represents and all that she has accomplished. Showing allegiance to the American flag and our Republic (under God) is the very least that we should do. The PATRIOT PARTY should also be engaged in the promotion of school choice options to the fullest extent possible. We disagree with taking all manifestations of religion out of our public school system (prayer, ten commandments, etc.); we disagree with the principles of common core and the ensuing methodology to instruct, and we disagree with the 1619 Project curriculum being taught in some of our public schools.

11. We have an American first approach to our system of immigration.

Without sovereign borders that are enforced by the rule of law contained within our immigration system, we do not have a country. Illegal aliens who are allowed to overrun our borders will create confusion, lawlessness, and anarchy that will lead to a blatant disregard for moral and ethical standards of behavior in the United States of America. The PATRIOT Party maintains that:

- We build a wall
- We deport illegal aliens
- We expand the scope of the President's legal (and Supreme Court validated) national emergency powers with an increased military presence until our borders have been sealed in full
- Economic and diplomatic pressure should equally be applied to those countries from where the illegal immigrants originate, as well as, our close friend and ally, Mexico
- We end the travesty of illegal immigrants receiving welfare, free education,

and other entitlements that encourage the unseemly and unlawful behavior

- We revamp the immigration and asylum laws
- We cut off all federal funding for sanctuary cities that would circumvent federal laws

We disagree with chain migration, catch and release, faulty claims of credible fear of persecution, anchor baby extension, and children immediately being turned over to Health and Human Services and placed in the “least restrictive setting” that consequently lead to illegal behavior.

12. We have an America-first approach to our system of elections.

We must enact and/or change all existing election laws to close all loopholes that would allow and propagate fraudulent and illegal activity in our system of elections. For example:

- Harvesting and the collection ballots
- Judicial activism and legislative avoidance (Article II, Section I, Paragraph II)
- Not purging voter registration rolls
- Failure to authenticate ballots
- Lack of voter identification
- Cases of multiple voting
- Limited visibility and concurrence to counting votes
- Technology implications

I believe that as a result of our extra-constitutional election law actions and accommodations before the last election, we have opened the door to a countless number of irregularities and unlawful practices that are not in harmony with the original intent of our Constitution. It is the responsibility of the state legislature to create, enact, and/or modify election laws. We must reel in the litany of extra-constitutional practices with legislation that preserves election law integrity and assures the long-term viability of our nation as a Constitutional Republic. We disagree with counting any illegal

vote.

13. We have an America first approach to our energy policy.

A robust energy policy is vital to our national security interests and must be inclusive of all free-market options available to us. We disagree with radical environmental policies (Green New Deal included) that hinder the exploration, extraction, manufacture, and distribution of fossil fuel activity.

In conclusion, I believe that the above PATRIOT MANIFESTO helps us espouse and codify the foundational elements of a movement where biblical principles are always the filter from which we view governance and public policy. This perspective will help us accomplish several very important things:

a. It will unify a broad base of the electorate (true PATRIOTS) who believe in a God-centered universe and those moralists (who may not agree in full) but will jump on board to fight the establishment. In other words, our movement must have a Christian and faith-based consensus along with those who at least appreciate our level of focus to disrupt the establishment.

b. It will have the effect of weeding out the extreme element among us who could do great harm to our movement and cause. Violence, intimidation, graft, corruption, and fraud (to name only a few) have no place in the PATRIOT PARTY platform and must be denounced. We are wholly obligated to the rule of law.

c. This movement will create a new focus and energy (10X) in the political domain that hasn't been seen in a very long time.

For those antagonists (haters) that will cry isolationism and nationalism in the extreme, you are utterly and completely wrong. The ingredients in this manifesto are the same "original intent" ingredients that our Founding Fathers used to design the Declaration of Independence and our Constitution. They are documents for the ages that must be protected at all costs. Yes, there is a price for our freedom. That price is sacrifice. For those antagonists (haters) that will cry theocratic "dominion-ism" and the erection of a state-sponsored church, you, too, are utterly and completely wrong.

The PATRIOT PARTY goes to great lengths to denounce the establishment of a state-sponsored church and any partiality of one religion over another. By the way, that includes favoritism toward the Secular Humanist religion. We believe in the free exercise of religion by all U.S. citizens. We also believe that it is the government's responsibility to create the boundaries and enablers that foster religious freedom, which in turn, fosters the moral consciousness that our Founders believed in. I pray that you will join me in eradicating establishment politics whenever and wherever it rears its ugly head. May God bless the state of South Carolina and her PATRIOTS! And, may God bless those patriots who have a very tough decision to make ahead on whether or not to remain in an established party or flee to the safe harbor conditions of like-minded conservatives.

Section I

FAITH

OUR FOUNDATION

FAITH: OUR FOUNDATION – Section I

When embarking on a near-impossible task (an unknown candidate winning the U.S. Senate seat against a 3-term incumbent), what were the guiding principles that kept driving us forward? The answer to that question is one word- Faith. Faith, as expressed in the Bible, is, “the substance of things hoped for and the evidence of things not seen.” (Hebrews 11:1)

Our team knew that we were on a very difficult journey to fulfill the basic understanding and meaning of the above verse. Team LaPierre was certainly hopeful in our supernatural call to disrupt conventional political thinking and to redefine what it means to be a United States Senator from South Carolina. Our team worked hard to devise an in-depth plan to reorient our thinking back to the original intent of our founding while keeping those contemporary elements that do us no harm and serve our conservative worldview perspectives and purposes intact. We were also hopeful that God would arouse the moral and spiritual consciences toward a more disciplined and orderly way of governance that reflected true patriotism and conservatism.

As part of that campaign journey, we were compelled to express the opinion that we do not believe in the manipulated redefinition of the Separation of Church and State mantra. No, Team LaPierre believes that while each realm has specific roles and responsibilities (both spiritual and earthly), they should be seen as complementary in nature (not divided) to the long-term survival of our nation. As we will discuss later, our Founders understood the vital importance that both religion and morality played in our birth.

FAITH: OUR FOUNDATION – SECTION I

It is with a Christian leadership worldview that we frame the chapters in this first section. We feel that these chapters lay the solid and foundational elements to both our public policy and our politics. While we are not perfect (fail we did) and remain sinners saved by God’s grace, we attempted to honor our Creator, the Constitution, and the rule of law in everything we did. May God be the judge of our motives, actions, and impact.

A Shining City

I have lived, Sir, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth – that God Governs the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it probable that an empire can rise without His aid?

-Benjamin Franklin

Any self-governing and sustainable model of nation-building must embrace the pillars of faith, virtue, and religion for the core of its existence. In their idiosyncratic ways of expression, our Founding Fathers each intimated their allegiance to Divine Providence and godly adherence for our very survival. They knew that goodness, love, and righteousness would drive us to be “a shining city on a hill.” These astute and scholarly men of history realized that without faith in a supreme being, self-governance would succumb to the machinations of man’s thoughts, desires, and opinions. These thoughts, desires, and opinions would ultimately lead us to a secular humanist approach to the body politic that does nothing more than reason without God.

In a political sense, they were telling us that if our faith wasn’t deeply anchored in the fabric of our communities and the vital organs of our government, the very life-blood and vibrancy of our nation would be restrained. Our Founding Fathers understood human nature. They knew that a lack of virtue, morality, and religion would drive us to see the government

bureaucracy and all of its allures as the final arbiter of our earthly existence. We can never let this happen. The delicacies of political ideology and reasoning without God should never overshadow or replace the moral law of God. We must guard and protect this sacred relationship and standing within our communities and across this great nation with unparalleled fervency.

The intersection of public debate, human reasoning, and God's moral law is the only true and absolute approach to policy formation and legislative initiatives. All other approaches have the tinge and scent of mankind who is flawed and sinful at the core. We must overcome the sin and iniquity that besets our earthly frames with love and devotion to our Creator that lifts others to heights unknown. God calls us to love the idea of America! It is an idea that is selfless with consideration for others. He wants us to love Him and love our neighbors. When we do express our love to Him and our fellow human-beings we improve the conditions of humanity with an eye toward heaven above.

The yearning and skyward gaze give us hope for a brighter tomorrow. That hope is a depiction of who America is and the essence of her eternal flame and character. In 2 Corinthians 5:2, it states, "For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven." This is the hope and spiritual longing that is the very basis and foundation of our great county. This is truly the idea of America.

We must guard that hope and longing with all of our being and all of our might. We must never let the democrat socialist and anti-God faction of American destroy her beauty. Determination, vigilance, and sacrifice will preserve and keep America's dignity through the ages. Without this resolve, we are destined to look just like our European counterparts where the light and luminescence of spiritual hope fade in obscurity.

We need new leadership in Washington DC that understands the immediacy of recommissioning America's spirit back to her roots. In a sense, we need a political rebirth. My prayer is this, "Lord, help me to remove the veil of self and let your light so shine in the body politic." Amen!

Salt & Light

The Bible is the best of all books, for it is the word of God and teaches us the way to be happy in this world and in the next. Continue therefore to read it and to regulate your life by its precepts.

-John Jay

Lord, help me to manifest the ingredients of a life filled with salt and light as an American citizen so that I can point others to Christ Jesus. Is there any better imagery in the entire world that can more accurately depict our duty to be responsible citizens and to impact our culture than these verses in Matthew?

Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven. (Matt. 5:13-16)

These few verses capture the essence of our civic responsibility in a way that gives us a panoramic understanding of our leadership role in the public

service and spiritual realms. First, the Word of God speaks to the preserving nature of our role here on earth. As preserving agents, “salty” Christians must be willing to engage in the level of spiritual warfare required to slow down and combat the moral erosion taking place in our communities. On a larger and more national scale, God’s Word is indicating to us that we should be willing to be the change agents necessary to preserve the moral fabric and godly imperatives given our great nation. We know what happens when mankind is left to his own devices. Moral apostasy prevails. Those same principles apply to the political arena. Wickedness will ensue if we leave our government to its own devices. God’s moral law must be defended at every turn so that we can experience the totality of our religious freedom. When we do, life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness will come sharply into focus. They will come into focus because we have decided to reorient our priorities back to Christ and away from the world.

We must never let the sands of humanity try to tread underfoot the excellency of the Spirit of God and His divine nature. God is telling us to let the manifestation of our Christian lights shine with a magnificence that can only be attributed to our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. It further tells us that we should never shrink from those spiritual responsibilities. Christians must never hide, procrastinate, or put on the back burner those things that would support our citizen involvement as born-again believers and people of faith. There is an expectation that we will lead out front in all of the spiritual sandboxes of life (and this includes our politics) that will be seen by the world, and they will take notice of our good works. When this happens, we immediately point skyward and give God the honor and the glory! The day has come where pride, self-sufficiency, and self-preservation must be put aside in favor of public service and a Christian leadership worldview. God is asking Christians to be the salt and light that will help us preserve the best that man can be through the empowerment of the Holy Spirit.

But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day. (Proverbs 4:18)

The Great Physician has prescribed the holy and reverent methods of spiritual cleansing and constancy (salt and light) needed to sustain a vibrant nation. If we abandon the necessary cure for societal deterioration, we do ourselves and our countrymen great harm. We can't have it both ways. We can't enjoy the comforts attributed to us in this life without great personal sacrifice. Religious freedom, security, economic mobility, and national spiritual well-being must all be supported and undergirded with an active and enthusiastic citizenry. The activity and enthusiasm must show themselves in a much bigger way than ordinary chatter and idle conversation. Citizens of the United States of America must covenant together to be active participants in the body politic to effect real change.

Sitting on the sidelines of citizenship involvement will ruin our country and bring her to her knees. More positively stated, if we are committed to being the salt and light that Christ desires in the public arena and beyond, we will crowd out all of the contaminants in this present culture and replace them with the godly attributes of Jesus Christ our Lord! Godly conversation should also saturate every word that proceeds from our tongues.

Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man. (Colossians 4:6)

When this happens, there will be no stopping the spiritual progression and lasting moral impact on our country. Our countrymen and posterity will not soon forget our dogged determination and resolve toward these ends.¹

¹ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Protecting Religious Freedom

It is true, we are not disposed to differ much, at present, about religion; but when we are making a constitution, it is to be hoped, for ages and millions yet unborn, why not establish the free exercise of religion as a part of the national compact. -Richard Henry Lee

Religious liberty as prescribed in the 1st Amendment is not just for the religious- it is to the benefit of both the religious and non-religious. It is for this reason that protecting religious liberty should be paramount in all political ideologies. There are, however, many political ideologies that aim to restrict our religious liberties and, in some ways, remove them altogether. We must be vigilant to protect these liberties with an ardor never before seen. Because we live in a day where history is not always reported accurately, children are being taught at a young age there is no such thing as moral absolutism. As a result, many American citizens have adopted the “Separation of Church and State” mentality. In other articles, I’ve written about the misuse of the above phrase:

The term and following concept of “Separation of Church and State” is found nowhere in the Constitution. In fact, the first time this phrase was used was in a letter from Thomas Jefferson to the Danbury Baptist Association in Connecticut, 14 years after the Constitution was written (12 years after the final state ratified). The letter was written by a religious minority in Connecticut, where the main state religious sect was oppressing them. It is

in his response that Jefferson states that no religious sect should seek favors from the government or thereby benefit more than any other, as well as, no religious sect should be repressed from their freedom to worship. The coin is two-sided, and it is in his letter that he uses his personal interpretation of the 1st Amendment to aid these people in Connecticut in responding to this oppression they felt in their state.

Therefore, religious liberty must be on our radar, must be in our platforms, and must be in our discussions about who to elect to office. Protecting religious liberty benefits all, not just the religious. Religious principles set a moral foundation for a country that respects its citizens, punishes evil, and protects the innocent. Furthermore, if you are a Christian and believe in protecting your right to worship, you must seek to elect leaders who aim to protect these liberties.

The Everlasting Foundations

As the whirlwind passeth, so is the wicked no more: but the righteous is an everlasting foundation.

-Proverbs 10:25

As I contemplated these verses of scripture in a political context, there were several things that the Lord brought to mind. First, we should never be anxious about the demonstrations and political “goings-on” with the progressive left and anti-God factions of society. Their time on this earth is fleeting...like chaff in the wind. This, too, will pass! Second, we are told that righteousness is the key to the everlasting foundations that we desire. Merriam-Webster defines righteousness as “acting in accord with divine or moral law: free from guilt or sin.” What an awe-inspiring way to conduct the affairs of government. We allow the righteous nature of God to consume our hearts, minds, and souls while fighting the moral and spiritual apostasy in our culture.

Will we allow the whirlwinds of this present world to destroy the fabric of America? As citizens of the United States, we must understand that the noise of humanity does nothing to rebuild the moral and spiritual components of that shining city on a hill. Much of the noise we see and hear is nothing more than self-aggrandizing and self-promoting postulation with little care and concern for our fellow human beings.

However, an enlightened and God-centric perspective on matters of

governance will open the floodgates of blessing and usher in a new season of hope and joy! I believe that South Carolinians are standing at the precipice of a renewed moral standing and political rebirth. When our great state decides to take a big leap into the great unknown, she will be afforded showers of blessings from the Lord our God and the untold favor of humanity.

The decision is ours to make. Do we want more of the same or the dawn of a new day in South Carolina politics? My argument has been (and always will be) that professional political operatives can't pull us out of the mire and muck (swamp) of political dysfunction. The only way forward is through goodness, righteousness, common human decency, and a love for our neighbors. These are the common attributes of "inspired conservatism" in the political domain that is central to our team's campaign.

Christian History - Not Lost or Forgotten

The liberty enjoyed by the people of these States of worshipping Almighty God, agreeable to their consciences, is not only among the choicest of their blessings, but also of their rights.

-George Washington

Like our Founding Fathers, I believe that the spiritual and moral anchor of religion is the tie that binds our hearts to national unity and patriotism. Simply put, it is the glue to American vitality. For well over 200 years, we have seen the vitality of America sustained by her virtue. While our country is far from perfect, the Constitution of the United States of America and our Bill of Rights have been the shining lights to help us progress and navigate through dark, shadowy, and difficult times.

First Amendment:

“Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.”

I do not believe it is a mistake that the objective of religion is the first talking point in the bylaws of our individual freedoms and liberties. Our Founders

knew that America had to be established on the “solid rock” of religious freedom.

In Acts chapter 8 of the Bible, we are reminded of the eternal and ever-present value of our Christian heritage here in America. In the first 10 verses in the book of Acts, the Word of God reminds us of how God uses mankind for his ultimate ends and glory.

Here is a brief and high-level summary of the events:

- Stephen was stoned
- The Apostle Paul (at that time, Saul) was consenting unto Stephen’s death
- Christians (His Church) were scattered abroad
- Philip went down to Samaria to preach Christ unto them

Even though the Christians at that time were being mercilessly persecuted and scattered, the Apostles and Disciples went about the region of Judea to teach and preach the Christian faith. They were having enormous success! Why? Jesus of Nazareth had preceded them sometime earlier with the power of the gospel. Yes, the people around that region (Samaria) had experienced the power of Christ and did not forget. In a sense, Christ paved a pathway forward for His Apostles and Disciples to further impact the region for Himself. Christianity was not lost, forgotten, or whitewashed from the recesses of their minds.

I believe that the same thing can be said of Christian history today. While the progressive leftist arm of the democrat socialists is actively trying to stifle the voices of Christianity (and religious freedom) in America, our Founding Fathers have previously paved a pathway forward for Christianity that will not be lost, forgotten, or whitewashed. That is, assuming one condition is met. That condition is the political will of conservative Republicans in America to stand up and fight for our Christian heritage. When we selflessly go out and spread the good news of Christ in the political domain, like Philip, I believe that we will have equal success. God wants willing participants to throw off the shackles of progressivism and socialist bondage. In the end, that is

what I think Benjamin Franklin meant when he said that “we have a Republic, madam, if you can keep it.”

Having the Authority to Lead

Christian Leadership Defined: “The thoughts, desires, passions, and actions of Christian men and women, by the leading of the Holy Spirit and under God’s control, for selfless ends.”

We are given directives from God’s word on how to govern every facet of our lives- beginning with self-government, we are commanded to then govern our family unit, participate in church government, and lastly civic government- while not explicitly laid out, the outlines are there. If we are to derive wisdom from somewhere on how to govern, we must first look to the basis of our belief. This is the worldview from which we see everything in life.

Our Christian Directives:

1. Dominion – Sovereign or supreme authority; the power of governing and controlling.

No discussion on Christian leadership can take place without including a full understanding of our dominion responsibilities. Early in the Genesis account, God laid out a plan for man to exert influence, persuasion, impact, and control. He was telling mankind that we were going to be the vessels and instruments for Him to accomplish His will.

“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.” (Genesis 1: 28)

2. Ambassador – an official envoy; especially: a diplomatic agent of the highest rank accredited to a foreign government or sovereign as the resident representative of his or her own government or sovereign or appointed for a special and often temporary diplomatic assignment.

How appropriate is this Merriam Webster’s definition of the word ambassador above? We are diplomats of the highest rank (made in the image of God – Genesis 1:27); accredited to a foreign government or sovereign as the resident representative of his or her own government or sovereign (we have received the Spirit of adoption from our sovereign Lord – Roman 8:15); or appointed for a special and often temporary diplomatic assignment (passing our time of sojourning with fear – 1 Peter 1:17). Yes, we have an official duty to glorify God and proclaim the name of Jesus Christ.

3. Steward – One who actively directs affairs.

The Word of God tells us to be faithful stewards. Our stewardship obligations go well beyond the depths of mediocrity and passivity. God expects “that a man be found faithful.” The word faithful is fraught with overtures of fidelity, honesty, justice, and dependability that we are expected to practice in our daily Christian living. When we combine the two words stewards and faithful, we begin to understand the enormous leadership assignment we have been appropriated.

“Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover, it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.” (1 Corinthians 4:1-2)

4. Power - possession of control, authority, or influence over others.

God will never assign a function of responsibility without giving us the

associated tools to accomplish His objectives. It would be contrary to His nature. God is not the author of confusion (1 Corinthians 14:33). The means that He will use to accomplish His will is through the Spirit of God. As believers, we have been given power to impact the world. When we seek the righteous and holy nature of our Lord, we will be endued with wisdom from on-high (Holy Spirit) to be able to navigate our leadership responsibilities.

“But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.” (Acts 1:8)

We have just explored four Christian directives that I pray will help shape our Christian leadership worldview in the political realm. These Bible truths should give us great comfort and joy as we serve the Lord. Leadership will not always be an easy road to follow, however, if we rest in the wisdom of His Word our yokes will be easy and our burdens light (Matthew 11:30).²

² The Goldmine: Claiming the Workplace for Christ, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2017.

Safeguarding Traditions

You will never know how much it has cost my generation to preserve YOUR freedom. I hope you will make a good use of it. -John Adams

The citizens of the United States of America need to have a national conversation about how to restore traditional family values. I believe that this subject is one that resonates with all Americans and is vital to the restoration and long-term viability of our great country. We are currently living in a culture that is grasping at any and all measures to help dull the pain of despair and apathy.

Our country is looking for true and consistent conservative leadership. As a society, we have allowed the material trappings of this present world and the godless attributes of humanity, to condition the minds of our citizenry. In other words, traditional family values are being decimated by beliefs, ideology, and the corresponding actions (legislation) that our Founding Fathers would never have tolerated. Never. Quite frankly, they would never have imagined the things that we currently condone that run contrary to our Founders' worldviews. Our silence, our apathy, and our cowardice have left a trail of sin-filled outcomes that are destroying our traditional family units, our faith-based institutions, and the moral center of our nation. The following symptoms may even hit home for many of us:

- Drug and opioid abuse

- Porn
- Sexual immorality
- Transgenderism
- Abortion
- Alcoholism
- Child and human trafficking
- Rape and incest

While this is not an exhaustive list of the sin-stained legacy we are harboring here in America, each specific issue has the potential to destroy our traditional family values and to destroy America. We should force ourselves to shy away from taking the external view that leads to the outward manifestations listed above, but rather consider the freedom gained when we look deep inside of ourselves. We can turn the corner from the allures of humanity when we decide to get involved and change the course of South Carolina politics.

We can and must do more! This is what drove me to run for the United States Senate and what keeps me involved daily as a citizen. If the citizens of South Carolina unite and concern ourselves with the spiritual and faith-based structural underpinnings that made our state and country great in the first place, we will return to an unprecedented level of blessing. The United States of America will never be the epitome of her true self without sacrifice and a reliance on Divine Providence. We must do more to help faith-based institutions thrive in our culture. This approach will encourage a focus on Godly principles, virtue, and standards of excellence that only can be equated with holy and righteous living. We must also elect true and consistent conservative Republicans to high offices in our government that have the depth of understanding to move us forward. I do not believe that long-term professional political operatives can pull us out of the mire and muck of political and spiritual dysfunction. Will you join me today and help change the moral and spiritual direction of our great state and country?

The If-Then Proposition

Political freedom includes in it every other blessing. All the pleasures of riches, science, virtue, and even religion itself derive their value from liberty alone. No wonder therefore wise and prudent legislators have in all ages been held in such great veneration; and no wonder too those illustrious souls who have employed their pens and sacrificed their lives in defense of liberty have met with such universal applause. Their reputations, like some majestic river which enlarges and widens as it approaches its parent ocean, shall become greater and greater through every age and outlive the ruins of the world itself.

-Benjamin Rush

The current cultural conditions in America alongside the anemic leadership in the United States Congress can be attributed to the “If/Then Proposition.” The cry from the book of Proverbs (Chapter 2:1-5) couldn’t be any louder. Secular Humanist thinking, reasoning, and debate have cast a wide and dark cloud over both the House and the Senate. It grows more difficult by the day to determine if we still have a remnant of elected officials who believe in the moral excellency of our great country. We need leaders in Washington DC that have the depth of spiritual understanding to lead our great state and country forward. Many of the current elected officials and long-term political operatives are NOT the answer.

If/Then are two of the most powerful words in all of the English dictionary. We can clearly observe a conditional element to the relationship between each word, along with an incremental and collaborative dynamic and understanding. These two words set the stage for how we will live out our existence here on this earth. It includes the decisions being made by our government officials. God's Word supernaturally captures its impact on mankind. According to sermoncentral.com, the word "if" is used 1522 times in the Word of God. How fortunate are we as Christians to have these numerous teaching moments; to have these spiritual cause and effect descriptive illustrations to guide us as we formulate a Christian leadership worldview?

These words are conditional in that there is a presupposition of an action that must take place prior to an eventual outcome. In other words, there is an inherent understanding in the relationship that some type of thought, event, movement, or directive must commence and take place before an end result occurs. For example, God uses the nation of Israel to play out various conditional outcomes as an illustration for King Solomon. He first portrays the positive conditional ties between Israel's actions (the "if"), and what will happen as a result of their actions (the "then").

If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. (2 Chronicles 7:14)

All God wanted from the nation of Israel was their commitment and obedience to live a righteous and holy life, while making Him the sole spiritual priority. God wanted their complete submission to His authority in their lives. God then goes on to personalize His message for King Solomon based on his own level of faith, obedience, and commitment.

And as for thee, if thou wilt walk before me, as David thy father walked, and do according to all that I have commanded thee, and shalt observe my statutes and my judgments; Then will I stablish the throne of thy kingdom, according as I have covenanted with David thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man to be ruler in Israel. (2 Chronicles 7:17-18)

THE IF-THEN PROPOSITION

Then, God takes it one step further and gives a clear warning of what the consequences will be for their disobedience in yet another if/then illustration.

But if ye turn away, and forsake my statutes and my commandments, which I have set before you, and shall go and serve other gods, and worship them; Then will I pluck them up by the roots out of my land which I have given them; and this house, which I have sanctified for my name, will I cast out of my sight, and will make it to be a proverb and a byword among all nations. And this house, which is high, shall be an astonishment to every one that passeth by it; so that he shall say, Why hath the Lord done thus unto this land, and unto this house? And it shall be answered, Because they forsook the Lord God of their fathers, which brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, and laid hold on other gods, and worshipped them, and served them: therefore hath he brought all this evil upon them.
(2 Chronicles 7:19-22)

The incremental aspect of the if/then relationship can be seen as we live out our experiences of life, either as a nation, or individually under God. Generally speaking, the cause-and-effect process of our actions takes much time to mature and to simmer. It is like a great big vat of Italian sauce sitting on the stove marinating to perfection..... or perhaps marinating to destruction. We let that secret sauce of our actions mature as we add various ingredients either to our pleasant surprise or disappointing demise. We make decisions as a nation or individually that will ultimately impact our spiritual outcomes, successes, and lasting Christian legacies. The totality of the if/then arrangement will play out on that God-given stage of life..... His creation. So, the question must be asked, will the if/then decisions in your life lead to a fine Italian sauce or one that is bitter and repugnant to the taste?

And finally, we see the collaborative nature of the two distinct forces. It is impossible to have one without the other. Outside of God Himself, an outcome cannot be rendered and materialize, without specific and actionable input from the human race. Both input and output work in tandem charting the spiritual graphs of life. They move in concert with one another. If the

input (the “if”) is man-focused and inherently evil, then our output (the “then”) will be tainted with the evidence of this present world. Some may even choose the path of compromise for their existence here on earth; where the input (the “if”) is conveniently straddled between the things of the Lord and the things of this present world. Once again, the output (the “then”) assumes a position similar to the Church of Laodicea. In this example, God makes it very clear what he thinks about compromise.

I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth. (Revelation 3:15-16)

If, however, and to the “praise of His Glory”, the input (the “if”) is God-centered and motivated by the Spirit of God, then the output (the “then”) will be covered with that life-giving blood of Jesus Christ our Lord and Savior. We will then bask in the light of His Glory and reach unknown spiritual heights according to His will. We serve a God of love that simply wants us to be obedient to His Word. Will you join me today and determine that the if/then decisions in your life will lead you to a clear path to Almighty God? Please pray with me to that end!

Unleashing Religious Freedom

Spiritual freedom is the root of political liberty...As the union between spiritual freedom and political liberty seems nearly inseparable, it is our duty to defend both. -Thomas Paine

Every so often a major decision comes along that sets the table for a series of other “tipping point” events (spontaneous eruptions, inspired decision making, galvanizing sentiments, and actions), that may not have otherwise been realized. I believe that the executive order signed by President Trump on May 4th, 2017 to be one of those uncommon occurrences. I also believe that it could go down in history as one of the defining moments of Trump’s presidency. While President Trump has made many great decisions that support our Republican platform, the decision to issue this particular Executive Order was a sentinel one.

I believe that this Executive Order has unleashed an enthusiasm and excitement among people of faith all across our country (especially South Carolina) that hasn’t been seen in a very long time. Men and women of faith have an extra spring in their step and confidence that they will be able to “freely exercise” their religious beliefs without restraint or censure. The First Amendment of our Constitution guarantees these inalienable rights. God has used President Trump as an instrument of His grace to stem the tide of societal deterioration and spiritual apathy. There is an indication that many in our country are returning to the spiritual and moral roots that made her the

greatest nation on the face of this earth! I believe we are seeing extraordinary developments all across our nation that can be directly or indirectly attributed to this Executive Order.

For example:

- There has been a resurgence of anti-abortion initiatives (fetal heartbeat bills) that have been taken up and passed by both upper and lower houses at the state level.
- The Released Time programs around the country are getting ushered in at lightning speeds. South Carolina alone has approximately 15,000 public school students a year who get faith-based training during the public-school day.
- A recent Pew Report indicated that 51% of Americans want a bigger role for religion.
- There is an undercurrent of excitement in the communities of South Carolina with faith-based organizations getting involved and making monumental differences.

In short, we have been given a reprieve along with an opportunity to take back the spiritual and moral center of our great state and country. Thank you, President Trump, for your bold actions!

Navigating Moments of Truth

A moment of choice is a moment of truth. -Stephen Covey

To say that Christians will experience moments of truth in our society is likely one of the most understated facts known to mankind. Bible-believing Christians everywhere will be bombarded with situations, decisions, events, personalities, and a host of other challenging issues that will make one's hair stand on end. If you think that you aren't prone to these difficulties and may have reached a higher level of human maturity, please think again.

There isn't anything that the enemy enjoys more than to employ a divide-and-conquer strategy in society, especially among Christians. Satan wants to create a toxic and divisive environment where he can keep everyone on edge and at odds with one another. He wants an environment where egos dominate, self-centeredness ensues, pettiness thrives, intellectualism echoes, bickering festers, and the focus on upward mobility is front and center. Yes, he wants a cultural framework at work where it is all about "me and my needs."

Christians shouldn't rationalize, justify, and simply explain away their actions when faced with the standards of this world. We need Christians who will look deep into their souls and make decisions that line up with God's Word. We need believers who have a Christian leadership worldview and will stand up and shout the alarm of wrongdoing when the precepts of God's

Word are violated. This includes our elected officials at both the state and national levels.

Our Response

The Word of God gives us clear direction for how we are to engage and live out our faith:

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Rom. 12:2)

I absolutely love this verse! Is there any better instruction found for interacting with the world than this? At a fundamental level, this verse is telling us, “Don’t do this. Do this. And here’s why...” So how do we apply Romans 12:2 when we are experiencing the unending onslaught of societal dilemmas that come up each day? TRUST AND OBEY!³

³ The Goldmine: Claiming the Workplace for Christ, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2017.

Nehemiah's Intuitions & Insights

You can never learn that Christ is all you need, until Christ is all you have. -Corrie Ten Boom

Dear Friend, I would like to tell you a story about an amazing man- a man who had the passion, drive, and sheer willpower to tackle a most formidable project. Like many of us, this man had an “employer” who had assigned to him one of the most daring and incomprehensible feats one could ever imagine. Sound familiar? It happened to our campaign team when running for the United States Senate in South Carolina.

We’ve all experienced something like this before. Haven’t we? Someone at work or home challenges us with some chore or project that seems impossible. We think to ourselves, “There is just no way this is going to happen... No way!”. This particular man happened to be employed by, indentured to, a prisoner of, and a humble servant of, the Lord our God. This man’s anchor was firmly grounded and attached to a Father who resides in heaven above.

Let me tell you a little about this individual. Let’s explore his character, motivation, and how he went about completing his assigned project. After reading down through some of these one-word descriptions, can you guess who it is? Can you guess who was blessed with such God-given abilities?

A PATRIOT MANIFESTO: CONVERGENCE IN SC POLITICS

Discernment	Trust	Trustworthiness	Planning	Vision
Persuasion	Delegation	Persistence	Determination	Political
Caring	Leader	Prayerful	Integrity	Love
Unselfishness	Resilient	Execution	Completion	Detail
Organizer	Godly	Brave	Faith	

Okay, I know what you're thinking. It could be a host of characters from the Bible. Let me give you a little clue. The clue is "52 days." It took this talented man 52 days to lead the completion of what God had commissioned him to do, a most improbable feat. Remember that God is in control of our lives and our circumstances. In the face of ominous and daunting conditions, we must trust in the Lord and allow Him to rule our lives.

Yes, I am referring to the biblical account of how Nehemiah led the rebuilding of the walls of Jerusalem in a very short time. I would like to recount the godly wisdom, intuition, insight, and relationship-building skills that Nehemiah exhibited as he motivated the people of Jerusalem to inspiring heights. I believe that this account has key learning information for us today. If we would apply some of the principles in this article to projects we are now tackling, how successful could we be? By using many of these same principles, could we be better servant leaders and public servants, thus, improving our overall efficiency and results? There is so much application for the workplace, church ministries, nonprofits, political domain, and even projects in the home if we would take the time to unpack and discern the totality of Nehemiah's approach.

Nehemiah's Spiritual Insight

The depth and breadth of his spiritual insight were enormous. Not only did Nehemiah have a burden for his people and the reconstruction of the wall, but God gave him spiritual discernment and understanding. Nehemiah had a deep comprehension of the prevailing issues and problems of the day.

Good problem identification and understanding are fundamental to

moving forward. The issues need to be studied and analyzed from a variety of different angles. Leaders must first understand what they are dealing with before they can offer concrete and sustainable solutions. Nehemiah knew that the nation of Israel was apostate in its actions and thoughts.

We have dealt very corruptly against thee, and have not kept the commandments, nor the statutes, nor the judgments, which thou commandedst thy servant Moses. (Nehemiah 1:7)

Nehemiah's Political Astuteness

In the following portion of scripture, his planning and maneuvering from a political perspective are clearly evident. He knew that there were “players” back in Jerusalem that would not be happy with what he was about to undertake. He wanted to make sure that everyone understood that King Artaxerxes was solidly on board and supported the mission. Nehemiah was also trying to create a clear path to success by leveraging all of the political capital he had developed with the king. Whether friend or foe back home in Jerusalem, Nehemiah wanted to make sure that everyone complied with what he was attempting to accomplish. In other words, he wanted to remove all barriers to the successful completion of the wall. When we practice good planning and analysis in our respective organizations, aren't we trying to remove the barriers and create the enabling processes for success?

Moreover, I said unto the king, 'If it please the king, let letters be given me to the governors beyond the river, that they may convey me over till I come into Judah; And a letter unto Asaph the keeper of the king's forest, that he may give me timber to make beams for the gates of the palace which appertained to the house, and for the wall of the city, and for the house that I shall enter into. And the king granted me, according to the good hand of my God upon me. (Nehemiah 2:7-8)

Nehemiah's Relationship-Building Skills

Nehemiah had a unique skill set to build deep and long-term relationships.

He had built such a close bond with the king that he recognized when Nehemiah's countenance was downcast. He was not just another servant to the king. He meant something special to both the king and queen. The ability to build relationships is a vital skill in any successful endeavor.

And it came to pass in the month Nisan, in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes the king, that wine was before him: and I took up the wine, and gave it unto the king. Now I had not been beforetime sad in his presence. Wherefore the king said unto me, Why is thy countenance sad, seeing thou art not sick? this is nothing else but sorrow of heart. Then I was very sore afraid, And said unto the king, Let the king live for ever: why should not my countenance be sad, when the city, the place of my fathers' sepulchres, lieth in waste, and the gates thereof are consumed with fire? Then the king said unto me, For what dost thou make request? So I prayed to the God of heaven. And I said unto the king, If it please the king, and if thy servant have found favor in thy sight, that thou wouldest send me unto Judah, unto the city of my fathers' sepulchres, that I may build it. (Nehemiah 2:1-5)

When Christians face what seem to be insurmountable conditions in the political domain, look to the Bible for answers. When the complexities of life seem to be much more than what we can handle, search the scriptures for examples of how we are to respond at the moment. Yes, God has even laid out a design for every condition of life that we can benefit from. Nehemiah's spiritual insight, political awareness, and ability to build relationships are just a few of the character traits of this great leader!⁴

⁴ The Christian Leader's Worldview: A Framework for Successful Leadership and Living, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published by High Bridge Books), 2016.

Surround Yourself with Christian Heroes

Associate with men of good quality if you esteem your own reputation; for it is better to be alone than in bad company. -George Washington

It has been said often that if you want to understand the character of a man or a woman, just look at his or her inner circle of friends and those he or she looks up to. This is one of the most understated phrases of all time. Just think about it! The people you associate with have an enormous impact on your development and level of spiritual maturity. The Bible even pays mind to this principle, regarding both friendships and marriages.

I like the way the New International Version puts these concepts:

Do not be misled: bad company corrupts good character. – 1 Corinthians 15:33

Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common, for what fellowship can light have with darkness? – 2 Corinthians 6:14

Walk with wise and become wise, for a companion of fools suffers harm.

– *Proverbs 14:17*

As iron sharpens iron, so one person sharpens another. – Proverbs 27:17

Many people want to associate with, hang out with, and be around those who are just like them. They want to feel comfortable that what they say, how they dress, and what they do will be accepted within their immediate circles. In doing this, they are insulating themselves, in a sense. Insulating from potential criticism, reproof, insecurities, and the thought that what they have become as human beings may not measure up to the highest standards of thought, language, and behavior. In other words, they want to be left alone to be “who they are” while basking in spiritual mediocrity.

On the other hand, and more positively stated, some have chosen their Christian friends, political alliances, and associates very wisely. They have sought out individuals that have the ability to challenge and mentor them toward new levels of spiritual maturity and awareness. In my mind, those are the keepers. We should surround ourselves with friends and alliances who are disciplined, loving and have a Christian leadership worldview. We should choose friends and confidantes who will lift us up when we are down, remind us of our fallen state when we get “puffed up” in the flesh, and drive us toward Christ-like behavior patterns.

Please do not think for a minute that I am trying to propose a super-spiritual elite group of Christians who feel they are better than everyone else. Absolutely not! On the contrary, as “iron sharpeneth iron”, we should be more willing than ever to involve ourselves in the lives of others. As we draw closer to the Savior, we should be willing to step out by faith (and out of our comfort zones) to do what may seem to be the impossible, for Christ. This means building lasting relationships with both non-Christians and those in the faith that need additional spiritual encouragement. The bottom line is that we are called to make an impact on the world (people) with the Gospel message. This includes the political arena!

Next, there are those in our lives whom we look up to and admire. Many of these folks may not be part of our inner circle, but they seem to be squared

away and have it all together from a Christian perspective. While they are sinners saved by the grace of God, there is something about them that we want to emulate. These Christians have been tried and tested on the battlefield for Christ. The Apostle Paul has a lot to say about these people to whom we admire in the faith. He told the Philippians to “mark them” and imitate those among them that live out their faith in a Christ-like manner similar to himself.

Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an example. (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things. (Philippians 3:17-19)

Let us recap just for a moment. First, we are to carefully and prayerfully surround ourselves with those individuals who will build us up in the faith. Second, we are to imitate those Christians who have proven to be spiritual giants. Third, we need to make sure we are making an impact on others for the cause of Christ. We need to be about our Father’s business and make sure we are ministering to and touching the lives of others.

We may look at Chapter 11 in the book of Hebrews, known as the “Hall of Faith”, as a good starting point for learning about our Christian heroes:

By faith, Abel...

By faith, Enoch...

By faith, Noah...

By faith, Abraham...

Through faith also, Sarah...

By faith, Isaac...

By faith, Jacob...

By faith, Joseph...

By faith, Moses...

And what shall I more say? For the time would fail me to tell of Gideon,

and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthah; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to fight the armies of the aliens. (Hebrews 11:32-34)

What a blessing it is to look to our Judeo-Christian forefathers as examples in the faith. Yes, sinfully they were flawed men and women, but they desired to live by faith. We then compare this prior list of Christian heroes of the faith to the pop culture icons of today, and we shake our heads in disbelief and dismay. Where is the spiritual depth?

We only can hope and pray that the Holy Spirit of God drives our country in a bright new direction. Please pray with me for a new spiritual direction and that our “heroes for life” once again become those Christian giants who are exemplary both in substance and in faith! Praise God! Christians need to surround themselves with fellow believers that are strong in the faith. We need to “mark” those that have become Christian giants. Learning from those who are elders and are more spiritually mature is part of God’s plan for the Church.⁵

⁵ The Christian Leader’s Worldview: A Framework for Successful Leadership and Living, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published by High Bridge Books), 2016.

Is There Anything Sacred?

Our Constitution was made for a moral and religious people. - John Adams

When is the last time you were so embarrassed that you blushed at something that went against the core of who you are as a Christian or person of faith? Can you quickly bring to mind a situation that was so deeply concerning to you that you knew it was going against the very nature and moral character of Almighty God?

Citizens of the United States of America have become so desensitized and indoctrinated to the sin and godless standards of society, that these things just don't bother us like they used to bother us. The aggregate exposure to the sinful ways of this world has conditioned us to be comfortable with the culture. Here are some of the ways the progressive left and "left of center" Republicans are pushing our society to condition the minds of our youth:

- Normalizing abnormal behavior (pedophilia, sexualization of children, gender fluidity, disrespect of fathers/male heads of households, and demonizing manliness)
- Getting activist Supreme Court Justices to make legal decisions that support a "living Constitution" approach to judicial decisions supporting cultural norms (Roe v. Wade, Gay Marriage, Obamacare)
- Demonizing what is pure, good, wholesome, and righteous found in the

principles of God's Word

- An incremental approach to moral degeneration
- Inversion of societal values
- Every thought, precept, ideation, and predisposition from the progressive left and "left of center" Republicans are slanted toward a secular worldview that is void of a Creator God

In the Old Testament, when Ezra and Jeremiah looked around, they also saw the blatant disregard for the holy and righteous nature of the Lord our God. All of the training, teaching, counsel, encouragement, correction, and commands slowly dissipated to the point where the Israelites started to look just like the culture. At the time, it appeared that God's chosen people were the ones creating the wicked culture that God told them to avoid. They were involved in mixed marriages with heathens (Canaanites, Hittites, and others), idolatry, child sacrifice, and other forms of pagan worship and ritualistic sin.

However, what is even more saddening is the role that the "leaders" of that day played in its development. Our Judeo-Christian forefathers decided to sit on the sidelines of life and do nothing, or at the very least they participated in creating the mess they were experiencing. Generation after generation had slowly drifted by while toleration, inclusivity, and the allure of sin took root, creating callouses so tough that any resemblance of holiness was now far removed. In two verses of the book of Jeremiah (written below), the Lord indicated that "neither could they blush." Ezra himself was so ashamed that he had trouble lifting his face.

And said, O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee, my God: for our iniquities are increased over our head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens. (Ezra 9:6)

Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they shall fall among them that fall: at the time that I visit them they shall be cast down, saith the LORD. (Jeremiah 6:15)

IS THERE ANYTHING SACRED?

What an indictment coming from the Creator of the world, God Almighty! He was telling them that they were so consumed with worldly pleasures and the sins of this world that He would cast them down.

Yes, America needs to get to the point where she blushes again. She should blush because people like Ezra and Jeremiah and others are willing to step out and cry against the ills of this present culture. She should blush because we have Christian leaders, public servants, and elected officials who are empowered by the Spirit of the Living God to take up the cause and fight. However, primarily she should blush because she comes under the conviction and shame of her sin by the impact and awakening that the Word of God stirs in her heart. She should then fall prostrate before Him in the shadow of His wings to restoration and glory!

Oh, that America would start blushing again and realize her sacred beginnings! The warning that President John Adams gave us is palpable. Our Constitutional Republic can only stand if those who steward and nurture her development are a moral and religious people.⁶

⁶ God's Gift of Imagination: Stirring the Stew with Christian Essays, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Strategic Godlessness

Freedom and not servitude is the cure of anarchy; as religion, and not atheism, is the true remedy for superstition. -Edmund Burke

We live in a day and age where the communication of information as legitimate fact and absolute truth no longer exists. By all appearances.....spin, narrative, and a host of other means are there to simply manipulate facts to further one's point of view. We've heard it said many times before that "the ends justify the means." Our godless society is telling us that the journey, process of creation, and the methodologies used to achieve desired outcomes are paramount. Principles, morality, and absolute truth are simply coincidental to the strategic imperative of cultural adherence (godlessness) and victory. Win at any cost! We see these godless tactics play out every day in society. Let us now consider the fundamentals of the democrat socialist's long-term consideration of strategic godlessness. I believe that there are three primary fronts of attack the democrat socialists are using to wage their war on America. We are in cultural warfare!

First, the democrat socialists are attacking God's nature by politicizing the misdescribed phenomena of "global warming." Manipulated data, misrepresented facts, underlying motivation, and a poor understanding of biblical truths have clouded their understanding of Genesis 2:15. In His Word, God tells Adam to dress and keep the Garden of Eden. In the original language, the word "dress" has the idea of having a stewardship responsibility

for laboring sacrificially unto God. The word “keep” has the idea of protecting, preserving, and cultivating the Garden of Eden. Is there any better model for taking care of God’s creation here on Earth?

Unfortunately, the progressive left and some “left of center” Republicans have decided to manipulate (through politicization) a wholesome God-given mandate to protect creation by using a backdoor approach to redistribute corporate and individual wealth. They want a tax on carbon! The left sees another opportunity to tax, spend, and redistribute our hard-earned money with the use of inflated and false claims of global warming. This is currently a world-wide propaganda effort to indoctrinate the masses. Don’t be fooled. This is another attempt to broaden the scope of government and limit our individual freedoms.

Secondly, the democrat socialists are attacking God’s church through a relentless onslaught of secular humanist indoctrination. The Supreme Court of the United States of America has ruled that secular humanism is a religion under the free exercise clause. They are tax-exempt and can apply for conscientious objector status. The tenets of this religion are pervasive within our government schools and other public institutions. They are brainwashing our children with godless principles, leftist propaganda, and iron-clad adherence. The false claim of Separation of Church and State in its current form has drained our country of its spiritual vibrancy. People of faith are afraid to freely exercise their religious beliefs both in private and in public. They are fearful, not understanding their legal rights. We must take back our educational system and public domain!

Thirdly, the democrat socialists are attacking God’s government through a political ideology that is unwilling to acknowledge a Creator. The further left they move, the more difficult it is to find any semblance of morality, ethics, and common human decency. The Spirit of God is null and void in any political ideology that is draped with the excesses of socialism. The democrat socialist’s charter for America can be found in the Humanist Manifesto, Humanist Manifesto II, and Humanism and Its Aspirations. I believe that their ultimate bylaws (socialist candy store) can be found when reading the Communist Party Manifesto. The godless control and coercion of every aspect of society

is their ultimate aim!

In conclusion, the gist of each of the three discussed attacks is nothing more than an affront to the Godly principles found in our American heritage and His Word. The democrat socialists are not concerned with legislative initiatives that improve structural deficiencies. Everything that they have to offer is geared toward more power and a total redistribution of corporate and individual wealth. We stand for equal opportunity, but not equal wealth. Christians must always be the salt and light in a culture that is headed down a treacherous and sin-filled path. We need leaders in Washington DC who understand the spiritual implications of our cultural deterioration and are strong enough to stand up and make a difference.

The Gift Giver

We have been given the secret keys to unlock the true meaning of the fear of the Lord and find the knowledge of God.

As we take a momentary pause during the 2020 election cycle to worship the birth of our Savior, Jesus, Christ, let us also earnestly pray for the moral and spiritual foundations of our great country! Each Christmas season Christians everywhere get invigorated and overjoyed at the prospect of celebrating the birth of their Savior, Jesus Christ. When we sit back and reflect on His birth and subsequent death on the cross, we realize that there is no greater gift known to mankind. God in His mercy sent His only begotten Son to this earth (as 100 percent man and 100 percent God) to die for the sins of this world. Christ willingly experienced a torturous death as a substitute for our Adamic sin nature, reconciling to Himself those who repent and accept by faith the free gift of salvation. For Christians, the meaning of gift-giving should have a special place in our hearts during this time of year.

Another compelling and powerful description of the true spirit of giving is found in the book of Ruth. It relates a story of how even the smallest of gift-giving gestures can turn into something that has lasting eternal value.

The Moabite widow, Ruth, was a kind and virtuous woman who was dedicated to faithfully serving God. She also demonstrated an unwavering loyalty and commitment to her mother-in-law, Naomi. Ruth left her native

land of Moab (she was a Gentile) with an uncommon zeal to minister to the needs of Naomi and serve God:

And Ruth said, Entreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee: for whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge: thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God. (Ruth 1:16)

After the untimely death of both her husband and two sons, Naomi decided to return to her native land and settle in Bethlehem. Ruth, who was widowed and childless herself, decided to accompany her mother-in-law on the long journey back. It was in the town of Bethlehem that Ruth experienced the graciousness of a wonderful and generous gift giver named Boaz.

Boaz noticed Ruth as she was gleaning among the sheaves in the field (the Law of Moses gave the poor the right to pick up crops left behind by the reapers). After further inquiry, he soon found out that Ruth had a reputation as a dedicated servant to Naomi, forsaking all that she had for lands unknown. Boaz noticed her kind and generous nature, disciplined work habits, and the trust that she exhibited in the Lord God of Israel:

The Lord recompense thy work, and a full reward be given thee of the Lord God of Israel, under whose wings thou art come to trust. (Ruth 2:12)

Boaz was not content for this poor (but righteous) servant of God to simply glean around the edges like most of the poor. He instructed his young men to let other portions of the crop fall among the sheaves so Ruth could gather those as well. He wanted to help her out so that she could reap an extra measure of barley. Boaz wanted his men to purposefully (handfuls of purpose) let fall to the ground an additional portion of the crop:

And let fall also some of the handfuls of purpose, for her, and leave them, that she may glean them, and rebuke her not. (Ruth 2:16)

What a wonderful depiction of a generous gift giver. Boaz was someone

who noticed the needs of another servant of the Lord and took action. When is the last time you went the extra mile to give someone “handfuls of purpose?” When is the last time you moved beyond the common and traditional forms of gift-giving to something so special that it couldn’t go unnoticed or unrecognized? What will you do next Christmas to indicate that you understand the power and the value of purposeful gift giving?

Well, for all of you romantics out there, I know what you are thinking. You are saying to yourself, “Wait a minute, Boaz ended up marrying Ruth, right?” You’re also thinking, “Isn’t that the ultimate gift in this narrative from the book of Ruth?” Okay, you got me! You are correct. In the end, Boaz does decide to do the right thing and redeems the inheritance of Naomi, while ultimately taking Ruth as his wife.

However, that is not the end of this wonderful and amazing story. What started as bestowing a simple gift of additional reaping for Ruth was used by God in unimaginable ways with untold blessings in the spiritual realm. What started as a small gift morphed into a redemption of the field and a marriage union that symbolizes Christ’s work on the Cross of Calvary and love for His church. It also symbolizes the reconciliation of both Jew (Boaz) and Gentile (Ruth), as the marriage union became part of the line of descendants to King David, through whom came Jesus Christ:

And Salmon begat Boaz of Rachab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; (Matthew 1:5)

And the women her neighbors gave it a name saying, There is a son born to Naomi; and they called his name Obed: he is the father of Jesse, the father of David. (Ruth 4:17)

In conclusion, gift-giving starts with noticing the needs of others while demonstrating selfless and authentic acts of kindness with no expectations in return. We do so as the Spirit of God consumes our hearts, minds, and souls. God may decide to multiply your gift-giving in ways not comprehensible by the human mind. Please be generous in your gift-giving to others at this time

of year. Small gestures can be used in miraculous and eternal ways!⁷

⁷ God's Gift of Imagination: Stirring the Stew with Christian Essays, by Michael J. LaPierre (Published by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Section II

POLICY

OUR FUNDAMENTALS

POLICY: OUR FUNDAMENTALS –

Section II

Team LaPierre worked at great lengths to provide the voters of South Carolina with the visibility and transparency needed to understand public policy and to make an informed decision on who they wanted for their U.S. Senator. We felt that one of the primary responsibilities of our campaign run was to educate the public on all of the major policy issues. We took what Thomas Jefferson said to great heart!

If we are to guard against ignorance and remain free, it is the responsibility of every American to be informed. -Thomas Jefferson

Not only did we painstakingly detail the content of our public policy positions, but we also went the extra step to review the “game film” of our competitors and documented them as well. We felt it critical for the voters of South Carolina to get beyond the notoriety and celebrity status of our primary competitor and see his policy positions for what they are. Quite frankly, at times the game film was confusing since our primary competitor had a habit of arguing both sides of an issue and claiming each as his own.

On the policy front, we went the extra mile. Team LaPierre felt that the extensive documentation of a multiplicity of issues was good training for being prepared on the campaign trail. In this section, you will find that our policy positions are lined up with the conservative element of the Republican party hook, line, and sinker. We were not inclined to cross the aisle and

support the progressive liberal faction of American and “left of center” Republican ideology espoused by those in the establishment. No, we used the views expressed by our Founders when protecting our Constitution, the rule of law, and the national security interests both home and abroad. We felt it our patriotic duty.

We hope that you come away from this section renewed in your determination to be informed, aroused by the spiritual insight and logic used to create our policy, and motivated to get involved and be active in your local communities.

Respecting Life

I've noticed that everyone who is for abortion has already been born.
-Ronald Reagan

Team LaPierre wouldn't be true conservatives and people of faith if we did not start this section with a chapter on protecting the sanctity of life. Our culture, long-term viability, spiritual vibrancy, and posterity's view of our relevance as a nation hinge on this very issue. We believe that life starts at conception. As conservatives, we must protect the life of the unborn child. Our campaign was driven by the charge to protect life and continues to be a driving factor in our individual lives. We believe that Roe v. Wade should be overturned without exception. The Bible is clear on this issue:

*Before I formed you in the womb I knew you,
before you were born I set you apart;
I appointed you as a prophet to the nations.
(Jeremiah 1:5)*

*Know that the Lord is God.
It is he who made us, and we are his;
we are his people, the sheep of his pasture.
(Psalms 100:3)*

RESPECTING LIFE

*For you created my inmost being;
you knit me together in my mother's womb.
I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made;
your works are wonderful, I know that full well.
My frame was not hidden from you
when I was made in the secret place,
when I was woven together in the depths of the earth.
Your eyes saw my unformed body;
all the days ordained for me were written in your book
before one of them came to be.
(Psalms 139:13-16)*

While our concentrated focus is always on overturning *Roe v. Wade* in its entirety, we also support pro-life legislation that incrementally saves the lives of unborn children. The heartbeat bill and/or fetal heartbeat bill (to name a few) are additional ways to stop the killing of innocent lives. The ritualistic murder of unborn children is a stain on our great country. Unable to protect themselves, defenseless and innocent, the unborn child is an unwilling participant in the brutal murder practices of Planned Parenthood and other abortion clinics.

Planned Parenthood should not receive any taxpayer dollars. Much like the issue of forced taxpayer funding (and healthcare provision) of contraception, forced taxpayer funding of abortions goes against the morality and religious beliefs of many Americans. Understanding that the Federal government does not have the authority to mandate people to participate in the taking of life, *Roe v. Wade* must be overturned and decisions remanded to the states on the topic of abortion. The elected officials in the United States of America must lead our country to a higher moral ground, protecting our survival as a nation!

Throwing Down the Gauntlet in Education

A Legislative Call to Action

If we continue to be a happy people, that happiness must be assured by the enacting and executing of reasonable and wise laws, expressed in the plainest language, and by establishing such modes of education as tend to inculcate in the minds of youth, the feelings and habits of “piety, religion, and morality,” and to lead them to the knowledge and love of those truly Republican principles upon which our civil institutions are founded. -Samuel Adams: Address to the Legislature of Massachusetts, January 16, 1795

The United States of America needs to pass legislation holding our public schools and universities accountable for “truth-filled” identification of course content. I believe that we have one of the largest cases of “consumer fraud” going on in the history of the United States of America. We are allowing our public university professors the ability to misrepresent the underlying educational theme (intent) through improper naming conventions (course titles) and misrepresentation in the syllabi of course content. In its purest sense, public education is supposed to:

- Survey the expansive nooks and crannies of knowledge unknown
- Explore both objective and subjective realities for additional context and learning
- Be an exciting adventure to challenge and inspire the recesses of developing minds
- Expose students to a wide and panoramic view of history
- Ground them in the basics of common human decency, kindness, and respect for others

Grounding students in the fundamentals of reading, writing, and arithmetic are crucial components of quality education. As part of the learning process in years past, there was a traditional agreement (or unwritten contract) between student, parent, and teacher, that those being taught in public schools would exhibit an acceptable degree of obedience and respect for the rules of the individual classroom settings. Likewise, there was also an understanding that teachers would instruct their students in a way that is void of personal ideology and/or religious dogmatism. In other words, we should be exposing students to a wide variety of ideologies and religious viewpoints for educational purposes.

We should not, however, be indoctrinating them or slanting the course material with the teacher's personal beliefs. Variety broadens the students' experience. Is that what we have going on in the majority of public-school classrooms and universities today? Do teachers and professors take neutral ideological and religious positions when teaching? The answer is clearly, "No"!

The secular humanist Religion - Public Schools and Universities

Parents who do not think that their children are being exposed to, and even indoctrinated with, religious propaganda and tenets are being duped. secular humanism has been ruled a religion by the Supreme Court of the United States of America. Outcries of religious indoctrination abound when a Christian prayer is said, yet many forms of the secular humanist doctrine are being espoused and pushed by teachers and professors in the public school

and university classrooms. Much of the philosophy of the secular humanist Manifestos I, II, and III are being taught by those teachers who have “anti-God” worldview perspectives. This specific religious worldview and its subsequent ideologies are being taught without question and restraint in public school classrooms and universities across our state!

The phrase “secular humanism” became prominent after it was used in the United States Supreme Court case *Torcaso v. Watkins*. In the 1961 decision, Justice Hugo Black commented in a footnote, “Among religions in this country which do not teach what would generally be considered a belief in the existence of God are buddhism, taoism, ethical culture, secular humanism, and others.”

secular humanism

So secular humanism is emphatically and undeniably a religion “for free exercise purposes”. Any claim that the “clear weight of the case law” is against the proposition that secular humanism is a religion is a misleading claim. secular humanism is a religion “for free exercise clause purposes”.

secular humanism is not a religion for “Establishment Clause purposes”. When Christians attempt to get the religion of secular humanism out of the government schools, however, (based on the same emotional frame of mind which atheists had when they went to court against God in schools) then pro-secularist courts speak out of the other side of their mouths and say that secular humanism is NOT a religion “for establishment clause purposes.” This is slimy, deceitful legalism at its worst.

This dichotomy explains why so many are confused about whether secular humanism is a religion. Informally, here is the rule: When secular humanists want the benefits of religion, secular humanism is a religion. When secular humanists are challenged for propagating their religion in public schools, it is not a religion. If that sounds insane, it is; but all insane people are still rational. This insanity is cloaked in the rational-sounding rhetoric of Constitutional Law. Remember: secular humanism is a religion “for free exercise clause

purposes”, and it is not a religion “for establishment clause purposes”.⁸

Do you remember when phrases like, “honesty is the best policy”, “full transparency”, and “open book accounting” actually meant something in public classrooms? In other words, there were no hidden agendas or ulterior motives in America’s public classrooms. Years ago, the course titles and corresponding syllabi would accurately describe in detail what the course content was all about.

That is no longer the case across the board in our classroom settings. Thus, we have consumer fraud in our course content. We have fraudulent activity going on in our primary, elementary, middle school, high school, and university settings. We have a pure and unadulterated ideology and religious dogma being spewed in the form of secular humanism while public schools and universities often mischaracterize and misrepresent course content and the associated titles. I have firsthand experience with this fraudulent behavior and what I believe to be unlawful behavior at a public university. This fraud needs to be stopped.

Legislative Recommendations:

1. To safeguard parents and students, teachers and school administration personnel will be subject to progressive disciplinary action, up to and including discharge, for offering false information related to:

- Course titles and content
- Deliberate misrepresentation and mischaracterization of classes
- Intentional education of unrelated curriculum in ideological beliefs

2. Universities will be required to establish procedures and protocols (including progressive disciplinary measures and procedures, complaint resolution, training, and compliance reporting) for truthful standards of

⁸ web.archive.org/web/20130521123706/http://vftonline.org/Patriarchy/definitions/humanism_religion.htm

course representation and neutral delivery. Failure to establish the procedures and protocols could result in the forfeiture of federal and state funding.

3. Parents and students have a “Right to Know” the vantage point and origin of educational instruction before they sign up for classes. Therefore, public school teachers, university professors, and school administrators will be required to sign a pledge to take neutral ideological positions in their respective roles. Educational facilities will be required to train those who encounter students with appropriate styles of communication that allow the students to ponder the world while having their personal beliefs respected. Educators found to violate this Act will be subject to progressive disciplinary action. If they proceed to indoctrinate students, they will be dismissed. Administrators found to be either encouraging classroom indoctrination or protecting teachers who are attempting to indoctrinate students will also be dismissed.

4. When reporting classroom incidents, students, teachers, school administrators, and others involved in the classroom setting will be protected by the Whistle-Blower Protection Act of 1989. Government employees are prohibited from taking retaliatory action due to a reporting disclosure.

5. Nothing in this Act is designed to prevent an instructor from honestly answering a student’s direct question. That right has always been protected.

In conclusion, we must hold our public-school teachers, school districts, and universities accountable for instructing our students with a broad range of perspectives, not limited to the specific ideological inclinations of the teachers and professors in the classroom. Pushing one ideological or religious viewpoint over another should not be tolerated in our public education system. If we truly believe in a well-rounded public education that is free from indoctrination, we must have “Right to Know” legislation that protects the beliefs of students but provides full accountability for the teachers and professors that would choose indoctrination over merely teaching our

THROWING DOWN THE GAUNTLET IN EDUCATION

children. A balanced approach to teaching a full spectrum of perspectives should be the law of the land. Rooting out ideological slants and perspectives, while normalizing a rich public educational experience for students, should be the driving force and underlying motive to the proposed legislation listed above.

Education Reform and School Choice

A Diffusion of knowledge is the only true guardian of liberty. -James Madison

Our country desperately needs a system of education that brings the basics of morality, common human decency, and a focus on the principles of God's Word, back to the classroom. For the most part, the classrooms in our public schools have become void of the spiritual nourishment needed to sustain a healthy and vibrant society. We see the atrocities occurring across our country at an alarming rate. Undeniably our educational system plays a role in some of these results.

First, Prayer in public schools and increased awareness of Christian history, including the Ten Commandments, should all be part of a student's educational exposure.

1. What is the purpose of education?

The primary purpose of education is to train our children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. Parents have a stewardship responsibility to make sure their children are productive, law-abiding, God-honoring, and concerned members of society that want to positively influence others and impact the culture.

2. What is the role of the Federal government in education?

The Federal government should not have any authoritative or decision-making role in the education system. The Department of Education should be disbanded, and the responsibility should be given back to “We the People” at the state level. We must allow parents the ability to craft the educational experience fit for their child’s specific needs through school choice initiatives.

3. What is Common Core?

Common Core is nothing more than the Federal Government indoctrinating our children with Secular Humanist values. It is a standardized form of teaching where students march in lockstep with federally mandated propaganda. The things being taught, amount of class time, types of testing, accountability practices, and teacher evaluations are all designed to create human robots that support a statist worldview. The humanists (anti-God faction) want to secularize our country through education and currently have free reign in doing so. A common-sense approach to education that de-institutionalizes and de-standardizes the experience will allow teacher and student the ability to form the sacred bonds of trust, as it once was in our country.

4. Why are standardized testing practices harmful?

Standardized test practices are a poor judge of students’ abilities and harmful because teachers start teaching to the requirements of the testing, versus preparing them with real-world skillsets. We need to return to classical forms of education where the fundamentals of reading, writing, and arithmetic are the foundation upon which higher levels of thinking are taught. It is critical in the current era of knowledge that our children are taught to think logically about what they are seeing and are encouraged to test those boundaries with debating skills. This helps challenge and inspire students to think and reason for themselves, compared to the rote memorization approaches in our current school systems.

5. Why is school choice important?

School choice is important because it brings the responsibility back to the

parents and allows them to design just the right education for the individual needs of their children. This choice helps craft and stimulate a thirst for both education and excellence. Technology has opened a very wide door for school choice to flourish beyond our wildest imaginations. We believe that school choice, inclusive of technology, has created a pathway for everyone to have access to the key learning principles found in the highest quality educational systems.

6. How Suppressing Freedom of Religion in Schools is Harmful to Education.

A great problem to our education system and the moral well-being of our children is that schools have removed all traces of spirituality in the classroom. We need to allow Biblical principles to be taught in the classroom and we need to allow prayer back in our public schools. We continue to be the mouthpiece for bringing the Released Time programs in our state from the shadows of obscurity to the mainstream USA. Faith-based training during the public-school day is a tremendous tool that is both underfunded and underutilized. The Supreme Court has ruled that the Released Time program is constitutional. When conditions of faith are removed from the classroom, you are left with worldview teaching that aligns with both the Secular Humanist religion and the democrat socialist political ideology. The strategic endeavors of both are to control all aspects of society with uniform thinking and practice. This is extremely harmful to the developing minds of young children.

7. Thoughts on non-ideological content in schools.

Personal bias and ideology play a huge role in individual teacher's methods of educating. We have a responsibility to allow students to understand life from a variety of perspectives. Children should not be constrained to accept a secular humanist worldview only. What we have now is a slanted perspective in education content. There is no way to strip all ideology from the teaching environment. Every teacher has a worldview of some type that will influence their teaching. What we do know is that we need to "crowd

in” the principles of common human decency to include respect for God, country, and family. Pragmatically, the best thing that we could do is to have a proper balance. While in the Bible-belt we certainly have pockets of both secular and spiritual worldviews being taught, unfortunately, that is not the case in every school district. We must fight to broaden our student’s exposure to various ideologies. We must also be careful not to confuse ideology with religious (humanistic) intent and undercurrents. School choice helps “smooth away” the preconditions of unwanted ideology.

8. What can we do to reform education and put a healthy balance back into schools?

First, we need to put prayer back in our public schools. We believe that this is a critical piece of any educational legislative initiative.

Second, we need to pass legislation that allows Christianity to be taught with equal weight and measure in the classrooms.

Third, we need to pass legislation holding our public universities accountable for the “truth-filled” identification of course content. I believe that we have one of the largest cases of “consumer fraud” going on in the history of the United States of America. We are allowing our public university professors the ability to misrepresent the underlying educational theme, through improper naming conventions (course titles) and misrepresentation in the syllabus. Unfortunately, I have had firsthand experience with this type of fraud. Parents and students need to know EXACTLY what they are going to be taught.

Fourth, we need legislation to decrease the Department of Education over a 10-year period and push the educational responsibility back to the parents at the state level. “We the People” must be in charge of our children’s education. I would leave nothing at the Federal level except 100 representatives, (2 from each state), as an administrative body, with ZERO decision-making authority or influence. Their only job would be coordinating so that the states would have the benefit of being able to learn from one another. In other words, no federal authority standardizing educational practices, but a communication channel that can share state-of-the-art approaches to education. Finally, it’s

time to restore the wisdom of the Ten Commandments to the walls of our educational facilities, at all levels of education. Scripture says that the Word of God shall not return void. With all of the messaging that our children receive, shouldn't they be allowed to also learn the simple truths of right and wrong?

9. How is leadership accountable for these changes?

We need to consult a broad range of parents, students, teachers, professors, pastors, Christian educators, businessmen, and other faith-based organizations who are connected to the educational space. We need to take a methodical and studied approach to how we can de-institutionalize and de-standardize our educational system while looking to energize the parent/student/teacher relationships. These traditional relationships were once the backbone to developing the next generation of genuine and diverse leaders.

10. What about a State Superintendent of Education?

While the office of the U.S. Senator from SC has no official decision-making authority in this matter, I would advocate for an appointment. We must hold our Governor accountable for getting results relating to education. Furthermore, those holding the position of Secretary of Education typically manage educational standards and standardized tests that support Common Core standards at the federal level. We need to go in the opposite direction and hold our local school boards accountable for results. We need to put our local school boards in a glass house and expect results. However, if the Department of Education and Common Core were dismantled and a State Superintendent of Education's job responsibility was defined (by law) to support school choice alternatives and effectiveness, that is another conversation entirely.

11. Should we increase taxes to provide more funding to local school districts?

No. Taxes are not the answer to the educational dilemma in South Carolina. The reform needed in South Carolina is foundational and throwing more

money at current practices, would deliver the same results. Ramping up school choice to a high priority level will produce the results that we desire. Florida is a prime example of this. Over the past twenty years, Florida has been focusing on allowing students the freedom to choose which schools they attend. The outcome is that their students have improved drastically, and their high schools currently rank 6th in the nation (according to the U.S. News & World Report), compared to our ranking of 30th. We could learn a few things from our neighbors in the south.

Our 2nd Amendment Gun Rights

To disarm the people is the most effectual way to enslave them.
-George Mason

Every citizen of the United States of America has the right, guaranteed by our Constitution, to legally carry a gun, including a handgun. This right extends to open carry, concealed carry, and carry without a permit. This right is otherwise known as “Constitutional Carry.”

All attempts by the left to limit our gun rights, in any way, are backdoor efforts to control our guns. We must never let this happen. I consider gun ownership to be a foundational element in deterring those who would seek to encroach on the sacred constitutional safeguards of pursuing life, liberty, and the protection of our families. In other words, it protects us from dictatorship and tyranny. In *McDonald vs. Chicago*, The United States Supreme Court ruled that the right of an individual to “keep and bear arms” as protected under the Second Amendment, is incorporated by the Due Process Clause of the Fourteenth Amendment against the states.

My position on 2nd Amendment issues:

- Oppose Red Flag laws which are aimed at controlling our guns
- Support the prosecution of felons who try to purchase guns illegally
- Support state reciprocity for concealed and/or Constitutional Carry
- Oppose banning large-capacity magazines and assault weapons

OUR 2ND AMENDMENT GUN RIGHTS

- Oppose all restrictions

The right to own guns is characteristic of what it has meant to be an American since the founding of our great nation. These rights should not be stripped away from us because of the actions of the few who choose unlawful behavior. The keeping and bearing of arms, as prescribed by the Constitution, is for the protection of the people from government tyranny and also to safeguard our lives, land, and families.

The Red Flag Con

They that can give up essential liberty to obtain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety.

-Benjamin Franklin

Tigers have an incredible hunting instinct of lurking in the shadows for hours, even days, biding their time for just the right opportunity to attack their prey. It's part of their DNA and inherent to who they are as one of the most ferocious animals on the face of the earth. Oftentimes, they will wait for the exact moment when a situation or event occurs that helps isolate their intended target. They also have the uncanny ability to blend in with the environment around them, not allowing others to be able to detect them for what they truly represent- a danger. A disabled or hurt gazelle, a baby antelope gone astray, and even an elder statesman of the zebra herd not quite able to keep up with the rest, leave them vulnerable to attack. A cruel death is imminent in all but the most unusual cases. Simply put, tigers instinctively know how to take advantage of the situation and ultimately capture and destroy their prey. They are master opportunists!

In recent "Red Flag" discussion and potential legislation being floated by "left of center" professional political operatives, we've seen the same hunting instincts played out in the political domain before our very eyes. However, this time the prey is not of the animal variety, it is the potential for disastrous legislation that will attack our 2nd, 5th, and 14th amendment rights. Political

opportunists have been lurking in the background for years waiting for just the right opportunity to pass unconstitutional legislation that is nothing more than a backdoor attempt to infringe upon our gun rights. They want to open the doors of “extreme risk protection laws” with broadly defined terms of adjudication that categorically takes power from “We the People” and hands it over to the government and state interventionists. When has that ever worked in the history of the United States of America?

Our Founding Fathers expected much more from the body of the United States Senate. They expected our Senators to be a deliberative body and one that took the long and studied view of the issues in the aftermath of horrific and emotional events. When writing the Federalist Papers, Alexander Hamilton, John Jay, and James Madison knew that an “excited” minority should never rule the day in a moment of passion. In other words, they knew that our elected Senators should never make domestic strategic decisions when enveloped with emotion. Once again, political opportunists have exhibited the propensity to react to current events, take the political pulse of the day, and legislate as a professional political operative. We need politicians who will stand up and lead and are not reactionaries to current events.

The small number of states (eighteen states and the District of Columbia) that have passed Red Flag legislation have done nothing more than deprive lawful citizens of their rights to constitutional due process. Under Red Flag legislation, you are first guilty until you prove yourself innocent. In other words, the guns are taken until the courts vacate an extreme risk protection order. These laws fly in the face of our 5th and 14th amendment rights guaranteeing due process. Many of our Senators keep inching us closer to a European model of gun ownership where no European country has more than 30% of its citizens owning guns. The gun restrictions are endless. There is a reason why Europe relies on the military might of the U.S. to protect them. They have ceded control of the most fundamental form of protection... gun rights. They are unable to defend themselves.

Unfortunately, political opportunists haven’t proposed any type of legislation that strikes at the root of the mass shootings. They continue a strategy of managing the symptoms and results of the heinous acts while disregarding all

of the causal relationships that exacerbate the potential for these shootings. The statistics are well documented that when people of all ages are involved as a family in faith-based and other community outreach programs, acts of gun violence correspondingly go down. We need to have an open and honest discussion about the root causes in our society that support this evil. Only then will our country be able to strike at the heart of the matter and begin to rebuild her moral and spiritual center.

I support legislation that will strengthen the family unit, restore prayer in public schools, bring the Released Time programs from the shadows of obscurity to the mainstream USA, restore the vital importance of quality mental health facilities in our nation, remove mental health stigmas, fight to overturn Roe v. Wade, build up the Opportunity Zones in America, and restore an educational system that believes in the goodness and distinctiveness of America and her moral and spiritual values. Creating a vision for America that gives us hope for a brighter tomorrow must be at the forefront of all our efforts to abate gun violence. Infringing on our gun rights is not the answer. We need true vision and leadership that sets America on a plane that is commensurate with her responsibility to the world and our Creator.

Amendment 2 – A well-regulated militia being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms shall not be infringed.

Amendment 5 – No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the militia, when in actual service in time of war or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offense to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb; nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use, without just compensation.

THE RED FLAG CON

Amendment 14 – All persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside. No state shall make or enforce any law which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States; nor shall any state deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any person within its jurisdiction the equal protection of the law.

Mitigating Gun Violence

Are we at last brought to such humiliating and debasing degradation that we cannot be trusted with arms for our defense? Where is the difference between having our arms in possession and under our direction, and having them under the management of Congress? If our defense be the real object of having those arms, in whose hands can they be trusted with more propriety, or equal safety to us, as in our own hands?

-Patrick Henry

Each time there is a violent gun offense in the United States of America, the progressive left starts howling for the confiscation of our guns. They believe that it is the guns themselves that plan and carry out these horrendous and heinous crimes. It is not the guns that force and expose the would-be perpetrators and violent felons to thousands of hours of violent video games, viewing pornography, and other mediums that indoctrinate and shape a distorted view of the world and everything in it. It is not the guns who break down the family unit, bonds of marriage, and the ties to local faith-based ministries. The guns do not yield to the old sin nature of our flesh and forget the righteousness of our Savior. The guns do not premeditate the diabolical and dastardly initiatives for destruction, horror, and pain.

The plain truth is that the progressive left and those left of center Republicans who want to take our guns feel that managing the symptoms

of the violence is more important than attacking the root cause. They are unwilling to admit that the primary solution lies at the root of mitigating gun violence and not in managing the horrendous results. There are four basic reasons that they are unwilling to tackle the most obvious and long-term solution to gun violence.

1. Easy Fix – It seems a simple solution to just take our guns.

They are unwilling to engage in the hard work of mentoring, discipling, encouraging, and loving their neighbors. Instead of getting down in the trenches and making a difference in the lives of people, it is much easier to lament a position where inanimate objects are the problem vs. being cause in the matter and getting to a real solution.

2. Political Leverage – Many would argue that the left has no desire to solve the problem because they believe that the issue gives them political leverage.

In other words, it suits their narrative. Each time a violent gun offense occurs, the left uses it as an opportunity to showcase their “superior” moral positions on the issue. They apply deep and heavy pressure on the emotions of the electorate, in the moment, to incite wrathful sentiments and demonstrations through demagoguery.

3. Anti-God Ideology – They are unwilling to believe that promoting faith-based initiatives will in any way help stop and/or cure violent offenders.

They believe that the goodness of humanity and their ingenuity is better suited to solve the problem of gun violence than the Creator of the universe. They are unaware and callous to spiritual and faith-based solutions.

4. Destabilize Our Country – At the root of gun confiscation lies the need for full control and the ability to seize ultimate power.

They will not be able to accomplish their desired ends without taking our guns. The 2nd amendment is an affront to those who want our guns.

The left will attempt to use every measure and means available to them to seize our guns and stand ready to swoop in and save us from ourselves. The progressives and left-of-center Republicans will also use every backdoor trick in the book to gain some sort of a foothold i.e., Red Flag laws.

However, I believe that there ARE real solutions currently at work in our country that are not legislative or political. The statistics show that when people are engaged in religious activity from an early age and are consistently participating that all forms of crime and societal ills trend downward. We need to continue to stress the importance of three vital factors in the conditioning of the minds of our young people.

First, their relationship with God is of the utmost importance. Having a relationship with Jesus Christ will aid and guide them on their path of life.

Second, we must do everything we can to reestablish the firm foundation of the family unit. Marriage is sacred under God and one that must be protected. Divorce is a wrecking ball to all family members and has long-lasting spiritual and emotional consequences. The statistics again show that when husband and wife are consistently in church and serving, that the divorce rate goes down.

Third, there must be a family tie to a local church. Human beings want and desire a sense of community where they feel they belong. God has designed the functioning of the local church in such a way as to fulfill those desires. Getting families into faith-based organizations (church) helps mold people toward holy and righteous thoughts and activities and away from the evil displayed in the atrocities of crime, perversion, and gun violence. We must continue to attack the root cause and not the symptoms of gun violence. Guns are not the problem, but the people who need our love, care, guidance, mentoring, and discipleship.

Therefore, the solution to gun violence is not political or legislative at all. We should not seek to legislate morality or punish the innocent. There are already laws in place that punish the offender. We do not need to institute laws that punish the victims. Yes, guns are used for horrible purposes. Knives, ropes, and anything a violent person can get their hands on are also used

MITIGATING GUN VIOLENCE

for these dastardly crimes. However, we do not outlaw knives, ropes, or anything else used by a person with murder in their heart. When we restrict gun owners, we reduce their ability to defend themselves. This topic is a slippery slope indeed. We must be cautious never to restrict the rights of the masses in the panic to punish the few. The root problem is of the heart. As a society, we must re-institute the foundations that teach people to live moral and upstanding lives. Let's start at the foundational level instead of trying to fix the results. Gun laws are not the answer to gun violence.

Curbing Excessive Political Power

When annual elections end, there slavery begins.

-John Adams

American citizens must do everything that we can to curb the excesses of political power with our elected officials, lobbyists, and those unelected officials who work in national government. Based on this belief, I believe that U.S. Senators, House members, and those unelected officials should be limited in the number of terms they serve (Senate and House) and/or reapply to their offices for those in unelected capacities.

I do not believe for a second that our Founding Fathers would have ever imagined the corrupt power bases and alliances created in our current system of government. Many elected officials will do and say anything to hold and maintain power at the expense of our country's well-being. It is this selfish motivation towards public service that has created such an unfavorable view of Congress and the administrative state. What I do believe is that our Founders envisioned a system of government full of virtue and righteous decision-making that helps tamp down the baser instincts of mankind and flawed motivations of greedy politicians. Right now, we have a system of government that encourages and incentivizes the wrong kind of behavior. We need an amendment to our Constitution that drives the right kind of behavior. I believe that term limits are the answer:

CURBING EXCESSIVE POLITICAL POWER

- Senators – Maximum of two 6-year terms
- House – Maximum of six 2-year terms
- Unelected Administrative Positions – Must reapply every four years to the position

The love of power and money in Congress is at the root of the problem in our American experiment of governance. The continuous flow of money from lobbyists to Congressional delegations and back again is a self-sustaining money pit that has ruined our political process in many respects. The flow of money between members of Congress further exacerbates the corruption problem. Dispensing capital and capital distribution (legalized corruption through quid pro quo arrangements between Congress and lobbyists) have become the norm. Term limits would greatly curtail this phenomenon and help minimize the corrupt intentions and attract a new breed of public servants. This new breed would be more inclined to serve the people and do what is in the best interests of their state and country. Let us return to the concept of “We the People.”

The Perils of Statist Ideology

A wise and frugal Government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another, shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not take from the mouth of labor the bread it has earned. This is the sum of good government.

-Thomas Jefferson

If the citizens of the United States of America do not take action and quash the progressive leftist bent toward big government and socialism, our country will suffer the long-term material and spiritual consequences. We must act and do everything in our power to stem the tide of the extreme progressive faction in America who want to take away ALL of our individual freedoms.

We are experiencing a level of spiritual warfare in this country never before seen on our shores. Big government will ultimately put the death grip of secularism on our Constitutional Republic with resounding and detrimental consequences. Simply put, the democrat socialists want to redefine all of the building blocks of what made America great in the first place. They want to DESTROY religious freedom; they want to destroy capitalism; they want to destroy our Bill of Rights, and, yes, they want to destroy the very essence of republicanism itself. They think that big government knows best and has all of the answers. Every additional layer of regulation, control, and

spending that is currently being recommended by the Democrat left and left of center Republicans will blow our government up to proportions that can't be controlled.

The policy positions that are being recommended by Sanders, Warren, Biden, and others are not even in the realm of reality and good fiscal responsibility. What they are recommending is out-of-control spending that will put our country at great risk. At the time of this writing, our current debt is approaching \$23 trillion and is a national security issue.

Fellow Republicans, we must galvanize our base and shut down the democrat socialist's attempt to destroy the American dream. We must continue to teach, educate, and inspire others toward our Founding Fathers' original intent of small government. We must point others back to the Constitutional Republic that our forefathers so fervently defended.

democrat socialism = communism

Now back in 1927 an American socialist, Norman Thomas, six times candidate for president on the socialist party ticket, said the American people would never vote for socialism. But he said under the name of liberalism the American people will adopt every fragment of the socialist program.

-Ronald Reagan

If the title of this article scares you just a little bit, then you might be showing the proper amount of concern and discernment for this unfathomable and wretched political ideology. The utopian high that the followers of this duplicitous form of government receive are short-lived. All of the grandstanding, demagoguery, and idealism of the “perfect society” where egalitarian virtue overwhelms the common man and woman soon abates with the assumption of power. Lies, intimidation, and brute force won’t be far behind. Our Founding Fathers were intense followers of both history and human nature. They crafted a Constitution that understood the baser instincts of mankind juxtaposed against the backdrop of centuries-long experience that included trial, error, and success. Yes, they had the long view of history to craft just the right experiment for America. democrat socialism was not even on their shortlist of preferences. Why?

Our Founding Fathers understood the need to harness the old sin nature and attributes of power, greed, status, avarice, and the ego drive pervasive

to dominate and control others. As a result of their deep understanding, they devised a form of government (a process of cooperation called a Constitutional Republic) where individuals could remain free with very limited oversight needed at the federal level. They believed that the states would more accurately reflect the desires and consent of the people. They created a most improbable document (our Constitution) that “uses” and “directs” the ambitions of those who lead us while building the appropriate checks and balances along the way. They devised the legislative, executive, and judicial branches of government to act as a restraint on any who would try and wrest control of total and supreme power. The institutions (limited in scope) that were created are a perfect blend of the control, mobility, and forethought necessary to protect both our current form of government, then, and well into the future. Our Bill of Rights clearly and unashamedly protects us from the long arm of government intrusion if practiced and adjudicated by the original intent of its authors. Our Founding Fathers trusted that we could work within the established constitutional framework and live free and prosperous lives. While anticipating the evils of the old sin nature, they also knew that mankind would work hard to preserve a “more perfect union.”

democrat socialism, on the other hand, was built on the premise of control and coercion. This form of government wants to control every aspect of our lives. This form of government represents centralized command and control over our economy, politics, culture, and religious beliefs. The freedom of conscience available to us in a democratic form of government is absent in this form. The utopian picture created by the intelligentsia, who are the democrat socialist operatives (intellectual elites), never delivers on its promises. They want to create a progressive accumulation of authority that limits the individual freedoms guaranteed by our Constitution. It starts with a socialist intrigue (utopian vision), soon replaced with the reality of everyday living. Just think about it for a minute. How are Russia, Venezuela, Nicaragua, and Cuba doing right now? How are Cambodia, Ethiopia, and North Korea doing right now?

Let me put it in another way to make my point. The General Secretary of Communist Russia (Mikhail Gorbachev) wrote a book discussing the

approach of moving Russia to a more “reformed version” of the totalitarian state that reflected his country in the late 1980s. Guess where this communist leader wanted to bring his people. You guessed it.....to democrat socialism.

Are we so naïve and devoid of all historical knowledge and understanding that we are going to hitch our wagons to a failed ideology and a form of government that has never worked? Can we not connect the dots to what lies ahead with a democrat socialist form of government? How did the United States of America get to the point where many in the democrat party want to move us to a democrat socialist form of government? Where did this ugly form of government come from and how did it get here so fast?

While history does not exactly repeat itself, there is most certainly a treasure trove of key learning experiences that we can glean from it. Let’s look at how the democrat socialist crowd and the progressive liberal faction of our country could now so engrain our culture. I am going to base my explanation on two significant historical events that took place in the last 60 plus years. First, we are going to look at the intense pressure that the Cuban Missile Crisis brought that shook the U.S to its core in 1961. Most Americans thought that there was going to be a nuclear holocaust. It was a very serious and disturbing time in American history. Citizens of our country just did not know if there was going to be a tomorrow. Once we averted the crisis and prospects of a nuclear war, we gave a big sigh of relief. In so doing, we also took our eyes off the ball of Soviet expansionist plans. We got caught up in Vietnam, Watergate, and a Carter administration (that had a sign on its back...kick me!) that was willing to let the Soviets aggressively expand their military while instituting puppet regimes around the world. Detente was used by the Russians to ratchet up their global power. Fast forward to the Berlin Wall coming down. The American populace reacted in much the same manner. We gave a big sigh of relief and then proceeded with a 30-year victory lap claiming victory and assuming that we had defeated the enemy.....Russia.

Once again, we took our eyes off the ball. We got caught up in two Gulf wars, the Balkans, Haiti, and Somalia. We also had a very long string of globalist-leaning Presidents that couldn’t pass the muster of what true conservatism is all about. They did not understand the slogan “Peace through Strength.”

DEMOCRAT SOCIALISM = COMMUNISM

We also had a whole generation of children born during this timeframe that never felt the pressure of the Cuban Missile Crisis and never lived through the anxiety of a cold war. They were free from the encumbrances of worrying about communism. Many people thought that Russia was in economic and political turmoil and they were not to be feared. We didn't have to worry quite as much about Russia running around the world aggressively setting up their puppet regimes. Unfortunately, what happened is that a derivative form of communism (democrat socialism) became a plague that was spreading its ugly tentacles before our very eyes on our shores!

The sad fact is we did nothing about it. Our elected officials did NOTHING about it! In the space of the last decade, democrat socialism has ratcheted up to become the mainstream political ideology. This faction has taken over most of the press corps, educational system, and entertainment industry. Everywhere you look, our young people are being indoctrinated and exposed to the evils of this progressive liberal religious doctrine. When one overlays the doctrine of the secular humanist religion with the tenets, tactics, and strategy of a totalitarian form of government, the lights go off! They are basically the same twisted ends. We need leadership in Washington that will stand and fight against a form of government that has communist and totalitarian leanings. We must put our feet on the throat of democrat socialism and snuff out any/all forms of this disturbing plague.

Consider It Well- Hong Kong

Enlighten the people, generally, and tyranny and oppressions of body and mind will vanish like spirits at the dawn of day. -Thomas Jefferson

As we watch the recent events in Hong Kong unfold, we are reminded and must take stock of, the circumstances that have allowed a “tyrannical government” (China) to intrude the inter-sanctum of Hong Kong’s democratic ideals. There are many lessons to be learned from China’s backdoor attempt to wrest control of Hong Kong’s form of government, system of laws, and the mini-constitution known as the Basic Law.

Since the transition of power and handover of sovereignty from the UK to China in 1997, there has been an ongoing attempt by China to upend and redefine the “rules of the road” on civil liberties currently enjoyed by the people of Hong Kong. What was initially labeled as a “one country, two systems” policy, has eroded into a “clear and present danger” for the original intent of the agreement. Make no mistake, the communist party has a disdain for any form of government where totalitarianism does not rule the day. That disdain is obvious with the heavy-handed tactics being used to suppress those protestors trying to save the liberties and freedoms that they have so long enjoyed. In the typical communist-style, the police force has used excessive violence and inhuman means to dampen down the political protests and

uprisings. Was this the expected pathway negotiated by the UK and China for the people of Hong Kong?

While the UK itself never fully democratized the jurisdiction/administration of the Hong Kong region, they did establish a semi-autonomous form of government that was to be left in place at least until 2047. However, it is clear by their actions over the years that the Hong Kong legislature and the Chief Executive (both who are predominately pro-China in their political orientation and allegiance) have no such intentions. Ultimately, they will make decisions that are in the best interests of communist Beijing, giving little- if any- support to an inferior (in numbers only) subset of the populace. This is nothing more than a crackdown (erosion) and an infringement on the rights guaranteed in their constitution.

What I admire most about the people of Hong Kong is that they recognized the new proposal on “extradition” as just one more steppingstone toward China’s complete and total domination/control of the administration. The people of Hong Kong recognized this as another backdoor attempt to manipulate and control the process of governance. The protestors are standing up and telling the world that they will not tolerate the continuous erosion of their freedoms and liberties. They see this as a direct and blatant detour from the original intent of the agreement between the UK and China when transitioning sovereign power. What can we learn about the recent events in Hong Kong, compared to our civil liberties and freedoms here in the United States of America?

There is a desperate need in America to have a “watchman” approach when safeguarding our fundamental rights as citizens. We must be on guard and watchful of any/all backdoor attempts to erode and limit those rights guaranteed by our Bill of Rights and our Constitution. Small and incremental “giveaways” of our basic freedoms are NEVER the right answer. For example, many recently recommended Red Flag laws that would do great harm to the 2nd, 5th, and 14th Amendments to the Constitution. Based on some arbitrary decision maker’s beliefs that someone is at risk to themselves or someone else, they want to be able to seize one’s private property first, without the right to due process. In the U.S., the Red Flag laws are nothing more than an

attempt to CONTROL our gun rights. Likewise, in Hong Kong/China, the proposed “extradition” laws are nothing more than an attempt to CONTROL another aspect of governance in Hong Kong. These are simply tactics being used to chip away at the foundations of our respective forms of government. Big government will never stop trying to control all facets of life, unless we collectively stand up and say, “no!”

Perhaps, we need to learn something else from those standing up, protesting, and marching in the streets of Hong Kong.....make sure that you stand up, protest, and march when our civil liberties are being threatened in our backyard! When we do protest, we do it within the confines of the law!

Philanthropy That Leads to Apathy

Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid it, Almighty God! I know not what course others may take, but as for me, give me liberty or give me death!

-Patrick Henry

The best way to help those that are down on their luck is to create the enabling processes that get them back to work. Work requirements are the starting point for welfare reform. We should have compassion for those who (for whatever reason) are not capable of working but chart a clear pathway forward for those who can. The Bible is very clear on this issue. I don't believe that legislated philanthropy is the "magic cure-all" for the impoverished, homeless, and less fortunate among us that need a helping hand. Legislated philanthropy leads to an environment of entitlement, which in turn leads to the creation of a welfare state. Welfare breeds reliance on the government which is part of the multi-faceted approach of the democrat socialists. Their end is reliance, control, and power.

Let us take a look at some of the current conditions. Former Senator Jim DeMint, in his book entitled *Falling In Love With America Again*, commented, "Today the United States' welfare system consists of a complex web of roughly 80 means-tested programs providing cash, food, housing, medical care, and social services to poor and low-income individuals." Only 2 of these programs

included a work requirement. While President Trump has done much to reverse the paltry work requirements, there is still much that needs to be done to get people back to work and contributing. The welfare state in the U.S. has ballooned to well over \$1 trillion. If you include Social Security and Medicare the welfare numbers prove well beyond 20% of GDP!

The long-term and sustainable solution is when ministries, charities, nonprofits, and other NGO (Non-Governmental Organizations) related entities decide to get involved and lead. We have a responsibility as individuals and American citizens to look to the plight of the less fortunate and take action. The Bible is VERY clear on this as well. Allowing the government to legislate (force) taxpayers to foot the bill for entitlement programs is not the answer. We the people, out of the abundance of our hearts, should be so moved with compassion that we immediately consider the needs of our neighbors. Outside of a few exceptions, creative solutions that stimulate work opportunities/requirements must be part of any real solution on this issue.

For example:

- Create home-based entrepreneurial ventures and other work-related enterprises that issue credit hours for welfare recipients that allow an adequate level of work/life balance
- Advanced incentives for businesses who hire and retain welfare recipients
- Joint partnerships between business and ministries/charitable institutions that offer daycare services for long-term employees
- Tighten the job search requirement laws for welfare recipients and those capable of working
- In the tradition of crime watch and neighborhood watch groups, establish voluntary national “poverty watch” and “neighborhood poverty watch groups” to help care for those in need in conjunction with local churches

Citizens of the United States of America are industrious people. This country was built on the backs of those citizens who worked hard and toiled to

PHILANTHROPY THAT LEADS TO APATHY

make our country great. I believe in working hard, loving our neighbors, and rebuilding the moral and spiritual foundations of America. When we take an active role in our government and the lives of others, each of the aforementioned responsibilities will come sharply into focus and improve.

Defeating the equality act

The Constitution, on this hypothesis, is a mere thing of wax in the hands of the judiciary which they may twist and shape into any form they please.

-Thomas Jefferson

We believe that marriage is between a man and a woman. We believe that gender is determined at birth. The equality act must be defeated to maintain the moral foundations of our great country. Transgenderism is still a lightning rod of an issue with many parents in South Carolina. Allowing “Y” chromosome males to participate in athletic events that have been traditionally female is just not right. Having a male in the bathroom or shower with one of my female family members, whether playing sports or participating in other school activities is not acceptable. The emotional and psychological trauma and scars resulting from this type of behavior are beyond all sensible comprehension and human decency. Having played sports from the time I was in elementary school through college, as well as professionally, I believe I can carry this torch for those concerned South Carolina citizens.

As conservatives, we must propose specific pieces of legislation that would normalize the traditional and biblical view of both marriage and gender. I also support an amendment to our Constitution defining marriage between a man and a woman. We need legislation that respects the traditional roles

DEFEATING THE EQUALITY ACT

and biological origin of both males and females in the athletic realm. The anti-God faction of our country is trying to destabilize society by redefining aspects of human existence that run contrary to biblical instruction and absolute truth. We can never let this happen.

The SMART Energy Plan

Society...is a partnership in all science; a partnership in all art; a partnership in every virtue, and in all perfection. As the ends of such a partnership cannot be obtained in many generations, it becomes a partnership not only between those who are living, but between those who are living, those who are dead, and those who are to be born. -Edmund Burke

The United States of America is beginning to experience the impact and bottom-line results of allowing free market forces to control and drive our strategic, long-term, and sustainable energy objectives/goals. As a country, we have decided to get the government bureaucrats out of the way and allow good old-fashioned common-sense decision-making (SMART Energy) to take over. Thank you, President Trump! We are living in the most industrialized and technologically sophisticated economy in the world and have come to realize that we need to “let the horses run!” The Trump administration’s continued efforts of rolling back restrictive regulation are being felt across the globe. In years past radical environmentalism was hampering the exploration, production, and distribution of our energy resources and needs, severely impeding our progress forward. Today, the world has taken full notice that the U.S. is back in control of its energy needs and is leading the world!

Just think about how far we have come in the last 75 years. Many of

us experienced oil and gas shortages during the seventies when the OPEC countries dominated the oil supplies and subsequent prices. We were at their mercy and our energy needs were dependent on them (many who were/are rogue nations) for oil and gas. That is not the case anymore. In June of 2019, crude oil production for the U.S. stood at 12,082 BBL/Day. We out-produced Russia (which is the second largest in crude oil production) by 1,373 BBL/Day.⁹ Fortunately, the forecasts only get better!

The renaissance with oil independence that we are currently experiencing must be protected through hard work, sacrifice, and a determination to efficiently use our God-given natural resources. Yes, I believe that we can have it both ways. Our country should be able to fully explore (with limited government intrusion) and produce alternative forms of energy with gusto while showing respect and care for the environment. Our Creator has blessed us with unlimited natural resources and has also given us a model in Genesis 2:15 of how we should go about harvesting these gifts.

God told Adam in the book of Genesis to “dress” and to “keep” the Garden of Eden. In the original language, the word “dress” means to labor and to labor sacrificially. I believe this word is telling us to work with vigor to reap the benefits of our natural resources while acknowledging from where it is coming and thanking our Creator for His provision. In the original language, the word “keep” means to provide, protect, and nourish the Garden of Eden. I believe that the same application can be used when looking at our current environment. We need to be good stewards of our environment by providing for it, protecting, and nourishing it. What should our specific long-term, sustainable, and SMART Energy policies be?

- Continue to roll back ALL regulation that restricts exploration, production, and distribution
- Let the free market forces reign supreme in the energy sector, i.e., no government subsidies or regulatory stimuli to help jump-start one energy resource over another

⁹ www.tradingeconomics.com

A PATRIOT MANIFESTO: CONVERGENCE IN SC POLITICS

- When cultivating and harvesting our natural resources, do it with concern and care for our environment (not radical environmentalism)
- Formulate our long-term energy independence with a multi-faceted approach where ALL forms of energy are developed to their fullest extent, i.e., in our national best interests

- o Nuclear
- o Hydro
- o Natural Gas
- o Oil
- o Coal
- o Wind
- o Solar
- o Ethanol
- o Off-Shore
- o Other

In summary, the Executive Order signed by President Trump in May of 2017, helped to unleash an energy resurgence. However, we should and must do more to plan for the long-term. I will not be satisfied until the free market forces are allowed to operate in plain sight in the energy sector. Our government must stay out!

Components of A Strong National Defense

Men are also bound, individuals and societies, to take care of their temporal happiness, and do all they lawfully can, to promote it. But what can be more inconsistent with this duty, than submitting to great encroachments upon our liberty? Such submission tends to slavery; and compleat slavery implies every evil that the malice of man and devils can inflict. -Simeon Howard

Any strategic discussion of our national defense must first include comprehensive analysis, understanding, and definition of all of the potential pressure points that could do our country great harm. Both external and internal considerations should be on the table. While a strong military (fully funded, staffed, and supported) must always be the forerunner to deter aggression from our enemy, many other national security elements contribute to building the foundation of our overall national defense strategy. For example: enforcing the rule of law; legal immigration; limiting our exposure to a ballooning national debt; increased cybersecurity measures and funding; exposing the socialist/communist elements on our shores through increased education; enforcing our 1st amendment free speech rights at public universities; protecting the 2nd, 5th, and 14th amendments of the constitution; supporting and funding our police force and border security

personnel; identifying and minimizing terrorist cell activity around the world; defending our allies and all other geopolitical national security interests; rigorously protecting our religious freedoms. The cascading impact of each of these factors helps us to understand the magnitude of our undertaking.

Rule of law

We expect the executive branch to enforce the laws of our land. Under the Constitution of the United States, the executive branch has the power to do just that. If there are outdated and inefficient laws, then we must put pressure on Congress to write new ones. Unenforced laws that become porous will do great internal harm to our society and our national defense.

Legal Immigration

We never allow lawbreakers to enter our country. All immigrants must stand in line and have the same opportunity as everyone else. Our immigration system has identifiable procedures that have been appropriated and enforced by law.

National Debt

At the time of this writing, our national debt as a percentage of GDP stood at 105.4. Our debt is approaching unsustainable levels with no end in sight. Long-term professional political operatives can't understand the law of unintended consequences. Thus, they continue to kick the national debt "can" down the road. This is an egregious violation of their fiduciary responsibility as elected officials to protect the general welfare of our great country.

Cybersecurity

Russia tried meddling with our national sovereignty by attacking the foundation of our Constitutional Republic- the consent of the governed. When a known enemy tries interfering with the election process through a cyber-attack, it must lead one to conclude that cybersecurity is one of the most important frontiers of national defense. Most of our domestic infrastructure

is tied to grids that are susceptible to these kinds of attacks.

Exposing socialism/communism

One of the great tragedies taking place in our country is allowing secular humanists the unconditional right to train our young people (future leaders) without restraint in our universities and public schools. When one overlays the religious doctrine of the secular humanists (Secular Humanist Manifesto I, II, and III) against the strategy of their totalitarian counterparts (communism/socialism), the similarities in their approaches become eerily obvious. One is a religion and the other is a political ideology. Both have total domination and control (power) as the central tenets of their system of control. They go against everything that our democracy represents here in America. Individual freedoms are replaced with government control.

Free Speech

One of the first things that repressive regimes try to control is the expression of free speech. The same tactic is being used on many of the progressive liberal campuses around our country. This needs to stop. Americans should have an equal opportunity to express their opinions without fear of intimidation and/or retribution.

Protecting Our Gun Rights

We have a constitutional right to bear arms along with due process under the law.

Police & Border Security

Since I grew up as the son of a thirty-five-year veteran police officer, I have a special place in my heart for the men and women who risk their lives to keep us safe. We owe police and border security an enormous debt of gratitude. Having strong, vibrant, well-trained, and appreciated law enforcement officials is a “must-have” for an effective and sustainable national defense.

Terrorist Threats

I believe that we must significantly increase the procurement and utilization of drones to combat terrorism. This must be a centerpiece of our national defense strategy moving forward. Major investment in high-tech drone capability to knock out terrorist cells is vital.

Our Allies

We support our allies and send a message to the world that we “have their backs.” We make no apology tours. We put no signs on our back that say, “Please kick me.” We live up to and enforce the treaties that we have signed with our allies. We believe in peace through strength.

Religious Freedom

For me, this is by far the most crucial element in a strong national defense. When we can practice religious freedom both in private and in public (guaranteed by our Constitution), our nation will take her rightful place as the greatest nation ever to exist. Complete and total religious freedom builds character, integrity, and the trust necessary to keep our country safe. It sets us apart as the shining beacon of hope.

These items are not only necessary for our national defense, they are vital to the lifeblood of our freedom as Americans. We must do all in our power to ensure the basic tenets of our Constitutional Republic and (as Conservatives) defend legislation that protects our rights and dismantle legislation that does not. It really can be that simple. We must stop playing political games with our national defense.

Strengthening the Military

Congress has no power to disarm the militia. Their swords, and every other terrible implement of the soldier, are the birth-right of an American...The unlimited power of the sword is not in the hands of either the federal or state governments, but, where I trust in God it will ever remain, in the hands of the people. -Tench Coxe

Military strength and preparedness are the bedrock for an exceptional national security policy here in America. Military strength and preparedness act as a deterrent to the forces of evil around the world that seek to do us harm. When America is strong militarily, the world notices and makes decisions accordingly. The same thing happens when we are weak. During the Obama administration, the entire world knew that we had a weak Commander in Chief at the helm. As a result, liberties and encroachments were taken by our enemies. For example, Russia waltzed into Ukraine and annexed Crimea- supporting and funding an anti-government faction to destabilize the country. Obama was willing to show some “flexibility” to allow Putin to navigate. We should never show any of our cards to our adversaries. In another example, ISIS gained a substantial presence and foothold in the Middle East as a result of our inaction and weakness in Iraq.

The components of military strength are wide and varied but include some of the following vital characteristics:

A PATRIOT MANIFESTO: CONVERGENCE IN SC POLITICS

- Believable articulation of military strength by leaders in government
- Supreme care of our veterans who served with dignity and honor
- Recognition of our veterans commensurate with their service distinction
- Deliberate and proportional military action when our national security is breached
- Allowance for military leaders to be relevant with real decision-making authority
- Support for our allies when their national security interests are impeded
- Aid and support for selective causes of freedom in regions that impact our national security interests
- Increased military spending (peace through strength)
- Exceptional recruiting, training, and placement of our armed military personnel
- All viable military options available against rogue nations trying to gain nuclear strike capabilities

We have the most dedicated military force in the entire world and we need to take the measures necessary to support their resolve to keep us safe. A strong military will help bring the United States of America peace and prosperity for generations to come!

Securing Our National Borders

The ultimate authority...resides in the people alone...The advantage of being armed, which the Americans possess over the people of almost every other nation...forms a barrier against the enterprises of ambition. -James Madison

Securing our national borders is one of the primary cornerstones of a free and prosperous Constitutional Republic. The United States of America should have a clearly defined geographical barrier of protection that preserves the freedoms and liberties of all Americans. As a beacon of light and a shining example of hope and prosperity, America is a hiding place and haven for those seeking to experience the totality of freedom through the process of entry appropriated and enforced by law. Laws of a porous nature will not stand the test of time. In other words, without the enforcement of our immigration laws, our country will soon cease to exist. Enforcement, consent of the governed, alignment to God's moral law, and abiding affection and faith toward the laws of the land by its citizenry, will procure a most favorable and long-lasting result that will be highly esteemed by posterity.

In May of 2019, the US had over 4,600 people a day cross its borders illegally which resulted in 144,000 illegal immigrants.¹⁰ The recent \$4.6 billion in

¹⁰ www.dhs.gov

humanitarian aid only put a band-aid on the crisis at our southern border. My position includes a multi-faceted approach to sealing our borders from illegal immigrants that include drug lords, hardened criminals, and terrorists, those who are sex trafficking, and others who would abuse and violate both human rights and God's natural laws. Conservatives should propose a strategic guide for stopping the illegal flow of immigrants.

Vital first steps:

1. Congress needs to provide the funding necessary to build a wall. Use all legislative means available to help provide and advocate for border security funding that includes a permanent and high-tech wall structure.

2. The President has the authority to execute the laws of the land. Therefore, the 1 million-plus known immigrants who have violated our immigration policies along with those unknown illegals subsequently identified, must be deported. We must increase deportation to send a message that illegal immigration will not be tolerated on our shores.

3. We need to expand the scope of the President's legal and constitutional national emergency powers with an increased military presence until our borders have been sealed. This proposed military presence will include those who have the specific skill sets to capture, detain, feed, house, process, deport and/or be caregivers. A progressive accumulation of forces should be used to stop the flow of illegal immigration. Once this objective has been achieved, we immediately draw down our presence commensurate with diminished illegal immigration activity.

4. Additional economic pressure should equally be applied to those countries from where the illegal immigrants originate as well as our close friend and ally, Mexico. We must expect cooperation from our southern partners. A significant reduction in federal aid or an increase in import tariffs should be on the table for discussion and debate.

5. We must revamp the immigration and asylum laws on our books to stop chain migration, catch and release, faulty claims of “credible fear of persecution”, “anchor baby” extension, and children immediately being turned over to Health and Human Services and placed in the “least restrictive setting” that consequently lead to illegal behavior. The previous administration (Obama) has created the enabling processes and laws that help illegal immigration flourish.

6. Ending the travesty of illegal immigrants receiving welfare, free education, and other entitlements that encourage unseemly and unlawful behavior is critical. We are simply making it too easy for immigrants to break our laws. This must stop.

7. We must enact legislation that cuts off all federal funding for sanctuary cities that would circumvent federal laws that support legal immigration and provide a haven for those who break U.S. laws.

I believe that the crisis at the border is a very complex web of poor immigration laws, inadequate enforcement, limited funding, election-year politics, rogue sanctuary cities, and creative loopholes by the progressive liberals in the democrat party. We must all remember that this American crisis is being played out over raw and unadulterated power. The democrat socialists and progressive left want to allow as many illegals in our country as possible to bolster the number of democrat party voters. By doing this, the democrats feel that they will control the illegal’s vote and ultimately long-term power. As Americans, if we stand up, take the lead, and say enough is enough, our leaders will follow. “We the People” must reign on the immigration front.

Legal Immigration

Guard against the impostures of pretended patriotism.
-George Washington

In South Carolina we take notice of the ever-changing positions of politicians in Washington, DC, based on the political winds, optics, and how close it is to election time. This time, the disingenuous and duplicitous decision-making is with our national immigration policy at our southern borders. Many “left-of-center” Republicans want to give millions of illegal aliens/lawbreakers a pathway to citizenship.

These Republicans espouse playing “matador defense” by giving lawbreakers a free pass to American citizenship sending a message to the world that anyone can get in our country. Just “break the law, come across our borders illegally, and we will give you jobs and take care of you” is the tactic. However, political opportunism abounds during an election year. These same “left-of-center” Republicans get real tough on illegal immigration during an election year and even try helping the sitting president fix the crisis. These “flip-flop” politicians have previously backed the DREAM Act and participated in Gang of Eight legislation to give illegals a pathway to citizenship. These left-of-center politicians will not quit until ALL illegal aliens and lawbreakers are given US citizenship. Let’s now ask a few questions of these less than conservative politicians.

LEGAL IMMIGRATION

- Is there potential for unknown drug lords and human smugglers to also cash in on the pathway to citizenship legislation?
- Who will be paying for the cost of incarceration should they once again break the laws of our land?
- Will such legislative actions reduce the wages of hard-working middle-class South Carolinians, legal immigrants, and minorities? (It is estimated that there are well over 100,000 illegal aliens in our state)
- How many construction jobs, landscaping jobs, farming jobs, custodial, homecare, and other South Carolinian/American jobs will be lost to these illegal aliens and lawbreakers
- Who will be paying for the additional healthcare (scarce resources) and educational resources (bigger classrooms) when we give these illegal aliens a pathway to citizenship?
- How much higher would our paychecks be (5%, 10%, or 12%) if you decided to stop “illegal immigration” and concentrate on “legal” immigration?

I want you to know that I whole-heartedly believe in LEGAL IMMIGRATION. Anything less will hurt South Carolinians and the American people. I also want voters in South Carolina to know that at the date of this article, many professional political operatives continue to push giving illegal aliens a pathway to citizenship!

Simplifying the Tax Code

When you run in debt, you give to another power over your liberty
– Benjamin Franklin

I recently listened to an interview with a guest on Fox News that talked about the art of “applying capital” in an attempt to win elections. When I heard the term “applying capital”, I must confess, I burst out in laughter! What has our country come to when we try to dignify politicians’ attempts to buy the votes of constituents and elected officials with sweet-smelling words? Apply capital? Seems to me like they are trying to perfume a pig! Another term that politicians use interchangeably on the campaign trail is the phrase “capital distribution.”

“Capital distribution” and “applying capital” is nothing more than a legalized form of patronage, graft, and morally bankrupt campaign finance practices to win and hold power. Our system is fatally flawed and in serious need of restoration!

We are in desperate need of recalibrating our campaign finance laws in the United States of America. The current system has devolved into the lowest common denominator of graft, corruption, and greed. We have allowed the excesses of the almighty dollar (mammon) to drive our system of government in ways that our Founding Fathers would never have imagined. While they certainly understood that individuals with means, affluence, and experience would play a big role in the nation-building process, I do not believe for a

second they ever imagined a system fraught with politicians spreading the money around like candy and “buying” their way to the top. The Bible tells us:

For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1 Timothy 6:10)

So, the question must be asked, “People of faith, have we become so enamored with mammon (money) and the love of money that we are not able to see the political forest through the trees?” Are we so desensitized to patronage, graft, and corruption that it becomes customary to the political landscape here in American that there is no turning back? Are the calluses so thick and battle-worn that we are naïve to their numbing effects? Are we erring from the faith and piercing ourselves through sorrows? Those elected officials who are “serial dispensers” of campaign contributions into the coffers of other elected officials, PACS, Super PACs, Leadership PACs, and other shell organizations that simply mask the entirety of the corruption, don’t go unnoticed.

In today’s world of surefire political success, money is seen as the primary vehicle and arbiter toward victory. Ask many (not all) in the South Carolina GOP leadership. They will unequivocally tell you that “it’s all about the money.” A pathetic and shameful way to have to traverse the long and narrow road of public service. In their political worldviews, money and political viability go hand in hand.

But then it dawned on me, isn’t that the difference between being a professional political operative and entrenched establishment Republican and those who believe in true public service? Shouldn’t the purity of the process lead us to want to minimize the impact of money and lead us toward selecting candidates based on their knowledge, moral integrity, and positions on the issues? Doesn’t this lead us to a campaign finance system that at least has a chance at morality and ethical standing?

If we truly want to have a system of elections filled with integrity and honesty, why not limit campaign contributions to individuals only. Let’s stop

the pressure from special interest groups and big businesses and allow the citizens of the United States to determine political outcomes. Let's also stop the "serial dispensing" of money to other candidates and their associated organizations. This idea wouldn't be so popular with long-term incumbent political operatives, I am sure.

In conclusion, I am growing weary of those in the public domain (democrats and Republicans) using fancy words to whitewash the "nastiness" and "filth" of spreading the money around to buy votes. That's all "applying capital' is about! It is the code word for I am either buying your vote or buying your conformance to party discipline, which buys elections.

Controlling the Class Bully

It is in the man of piety and inward principle, that we may expect to find the uncorrupted patriot, the useful citizen, and the invincible soldier. God grant that in America true religion and civil liberty may be inseparable and that the unjust attempts to destroy the one, may in the issue tend to the support and establishment of both. -John Witherspoon

It is only after exhausting all diplomatic protocols, professional courtesies, personal relationships, and the niceties extended to representatives/diplomats of foreign governments, that the real work with our Russian adversary begins. When formulating any foreign policy dealing with Russia, one must understand that those in positions of leadership in that country don't share any of our basic values. They will say and do just about anything to get an advantage. The leaders of Russia are ruthless. If you are prepared to come to a policy discussion or a negotiating table with Russia, with those facts in mind, you will have a more realistic view of how to deal with our adversary. They do not share our ideals on what basic human rights are all about.

Russia is very much like the class bully. Class bullies only understand strength. If the bully hits you, then you must learn to hit them back where it hurts. If the bully inflicts pain, then one must respond immediately and in a manner that is proportional and decisive. Anything less will put us at a

disadvantage. Our national security, and even our very existence as a country, are at stake.

In light of the facts stated above, what are our options for responding to our international adversary and bully, Russia? Where can we hit them that will have a maximum impact when they go rogue? The answer is very clear to me. We hit them in the energy sector. We focus all of our strategic initiatives on how to disrupt their energy sector. Russia has more natural resources than any country on the face of the earth. Natural gas is the only thing that is keeping them afloat. Their country is so economically challenged because of the ravishing effects of communism/socialism/democrat socialism, that any significant disruption of the flow of natural gas would cripple them financially.

We must also find a way to expand our exports of liquid natural gas to our European allies. Finding a way to peel off some of Russia's natural gas revenue streams and use that as leverage will give us a distinct advantage. We should also think about a proportional response to their interference with our 2016 elections. I do not believe that economic sanctions are enough. Cyber measures attacking their electrical grids that disrupt the manufacture and distribution of natural gas should be considered. We do not want to provoke Russia into a war. However, we must punish the class bully where it hurts for meddling in our election process.

While I am not proposing an escalation of hostilities with any kind of "first strike" response against Russia, I am recommending a response to their intrusion that has yet to be forthcoming from our leaders. We must keep our foot on the throat of Russian aggression in the same way that we root out the democrat socialist elements on our shores. We cannot let our focus dim on either of these unwanted intrusions as both espouse the same type of ideology, but in different degrees of intensity.

Free Market Healthcare

Will you resist the temptation to get a government handout for your community? Realize that the doctor's fight against socialized medicine is your fight. We can't socialize the doctors without socializing the patients. Recognize that government invasion of public power is eventually an assault upon your own business.

-Ronald Reagan

I believe that the first step in returning our healthcare system to normalcy is to conclude that privatization of health care is essential. Getting our government out of health care and letting the free market forces regulate our healthcare system is a priority. Economists around the globe agree that ANY form of government intervention and/or regulation impedes the natural and efficient flow of free-market forces. Politicians have never understood the law of unintended consequences when moving toward public venues and they certainly didn't understand the disastrous impact that Obamacare would have on our nation. Many economists argue that Obamacare represents as much as one-fifth of our gross domestic product. We should all be clear on what the intent of the Obamacare legislation represents. It is simply another form of the redistribution of wealth doctrine. It is a very bad experience and the first step toward a single-payer health care plan, which is essentially Medicare for all, to be administered and run by our government. In 2019, unfunded liabilities for Medicare (our current single-payer experiment) were projected

to be well over \$50 trillion. Besides the military, when has big government ever been able to efficiently manage a large bureaucratic institution? What do you think about the efficiency of the I.R.S? Department of Education? Social Security? EPA? United States Postal Service? Veterans Administration? We have all heard the horror stories about how poorly run these organizations are and the gross inefficiencies in each.

I would like to first lay down a list of key assumptions of what great health care and the systems that deliver great health care look like. This list is just the starting point for a full-blown recommissioning of what a free-market health care system should represent.

1. Competition that produces high-quality services with improved patient outcomes
2. Reduced overall health care costs
3. Results metrics that include end-to-end patient care
4. Incentivized clinical wages (advancement, cost of living increases, etc.) based on patient results
5. Reduced administrative burdens
6. Integrated systems of care with full visibility through advanced technology
7. Increased specialization
8. Full pricing visibility for patients
9. Increased patient choice
10. Group coverage offered across state lines
11. Broadening the types of concierge medicine business models that are practiced today
12. Reduced cycle times for patient delivery services
13. Robust analytics that helps determine causal links

The above assumptions will never be achieved with a government-run and administered single-payer health care plan. It is a utopian world (socialist candy store) where everything is free and there is a limitless amount of funding. It sounds very pretty on the front end but is extremely unrealistic

in practice.

Therefore, we must repeal and replace Obamacare with a system that ensures maximum competition to drive prices down and quality up. It is a value-based system where patient outcomes are the foundational anchors for success. The democrat socialists and progressive liberals in our country contend that healthcare is a “right” of every individual. I disagree. I believe that it is a privilege that can only be maintained through competition and free-market forces. Let’s start stripping away and dismantling the flawed remains of our current healthcare system and replace it with a system that requires limited government oversight. Command and control government intervention in our healthcare system is an additional power grab toward a socialist form of government. Allowing government-controlled health care is nothing more than ceding additional freedom and liberty to an unwanted intruder. I believe that freedom and liberty ring loudest when a capitalist orientation is allowed to function in plain sight for healthcare consumers.

Stamping Out Corruption

There is danger from all men. The only maxim of a free government ought to be to trust no man living with power to endanger the public liberty. -John Adams

Corruption in politics at the local, state and federal levels are much like fast-spreading cancer that is ready to consume and destroy the body. The cancer of corruption must be rooted out, and there is no time to wait. Like cancer destroying the lifeblood of the physical body, so corruption destroys the lifeblood of the body politic. We should never tolerate any hint of wrongdoing in the public sphere. Leaders and citizens of this country must be willing to combat the forces of evil in our government without hesitation. If we fail to enforce the rule of law in the political domain, we are consenting to behavior that is out of touch with the vision of our Founding Fathers. When that happens, the integrity of our founding documents and the very existence of our country is put at risk. The Latin phrase, *Qui Tacet Consentire*, is translated to, “he who is silent is understood to consent.” Leaders need to do more to attack the “cancer of corruption” in our government and must not consent by remaining silent! Let’s explore several ways that public servants can guard themselves and contribute to reform in this area:

1. Term Limits

I believe that we need an amendment to our Constitution that limits the number of terms for members of both the U.S. House and Senate. Politicians, lobbyists, and other institutional government bureaucracies are currently engaged in a continuous feedback loop of trading money for favorable legislation. Long-term politicians count on large sums of money being funneled into their campaigns for reelection purposes. The power and leverage of the lobbyists will be greatly thwarted with term limits. Furthermore, term limits help “level the playing field” and have the effect of democratizing the sources of power, thus, inhibiting the potential for concentrated power in the hands of a few. Excessive power can lead to corruption. When we stop the flow of money and limit excessive power, we help stem the tide of corrupt operating practices.

2. Congressional Insider Trading

The Stock Act does not go far enough in curbing congressional gains from insider knowledge. The Senate Ethics Committee needs to “batten down the hatches” and broaden their interpretation of the Stop Trading on Congressional Knowledge (STOCK) Act. While the new law codifies the rules of the road for congressional financial transactions, it also gives would-be perpetrators the blueprints for circumvention.

3. Hiring Practices

Congressional members must hold themselves above reproach and provide full disclosure of any unlawful practices committed by political consultants, staff employees, and other “for-hire” services paid by the taxpayer. We need to put our elected officials in Washington, DC, in a glass house when it comes to their hiring practices. Transparency of the lawbreakers and illegal practices for those that are hired with taxpayer money must be the norm.

4. Prosecution

The Congressional Ethics Committees need to do more to stop political corruption by recommending more cases for legal action and prosecution. Our leaders need to be held accountable for their actions. A slap on the wrist

will no longer suffice.

5. Ethics Training

The number of hours and the types of training included in any standardized training models for Congressional members must be evaluated for causal relationships and effectiveness.

6. FBI (White Collar – Congressional Division)

We need to pass legislation allocating increased funding for FBI agents dedicated to congressional oversight and investigation. We need to put some teeth into congressional accountability.

Our Founding Fathers designed a Constitution that would protect us from the baser instincts of mankind. The rule of law is the primary basis for that document. In a sense, they are telling us that the ball is in our court. We need to defend and enforce the laws of the land rigorously. Alexander Hamilton, James Madison, and John Jay also knew of the evil machinations of mankind when writing The Federalist Papers in support of the Constitution. I believe that we need to take a reformist approach to root out corruption in our politics. Leaders must be held to a higher standard. When enforcing our current ethics rules, we must never let the delicacies of political thinking and reasoning overshadow our commitment to God's moral law. His moral law is the foundation of the laws of our land. God bless America!

Eliminating Iran's Nuclear Weapons

Be it remembered, then, that there are tumults, seditions, popular commotions, insurrections, and civil wars, upon just occasions as well as unjust. -John Adams

I believe that the most pressing foreign policy issue of our time is the potential for Iran to possess nuclear weapons capabilities. The United States of America has had a long and tumultuous relationship with our known enemy, Iran. They have taken American citizens as hostages, our pastors as prisoners, convicted our students as spies, commandeered our vessels and shot down our assets with little to no military response. The extent to which Iran is willing to go to provoke the U.S. seems to have no limits. Yet, we continue to opt for economic sanctions compared to a proportional military response.

While I believe that military action should be the option of last resort, I also believe that we have come to the point (red line) where we should stand ready and be in a position to respond militarily. The current Iranian regime sponsors, funds, and trains terrorist organizations around the world, all the while looking for opportunities to attack and kill Americans and America's allies. Beyond this, they are working feverishly to acquire nuclear weapons capabilities for the first-strike advantage against our dear friend and longtime ally, Israel. We must do everything we can to protect Israel. The Bible tells us to, "Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee" (Psalms

122:6). It is not a command that we should take lightly.

Furthermore, if we put Israel in a position where they have to respond and attack Iran before they acquire nuclear capabilities, we risk destabilizing the entire Arab region. We need a clearly defined strategic plan and exit strategy for the containment of Iran's nuclear program and their blatant aggression towards America and Israel. That plan should start with coalition-building attempts to include our strategic partners and allies. However, America always reserves the right to take unilateral military action if her national security interests are at stake. While I do not support boots on the ground at this time, an accelerated and catastrophic air-strike targeting Iran's nuclear facilities should be considered in the future, if necessary.

The Pro-Life Flip-Flop

Make no mistake, abortion-on-demand is not a right granted by the Constitution. No serious scholar, including one disposed to agree with the Court's result, has argued that the framers of the Constitution intended to create such a right. -Ronald Reagan

The state of South Carolina is known for having strong faith-based communities. Our Upstate Region is not called “The Bible Belt” for nothing! However, despite our strong conservative leanings in South Carolina, we still deal with progressive-leaning Republicans who try to toe the line between protecting life and defending women’s choice. We call them “pro-life flip-flops.” This is a sticky battle that many do not like to fight. This left-leaning group of political operatives will allow for exceptions from fear of sounding harsh or cold-hearted. If the mother may die, the baby’s life can be aborted. If it’s a case of rape, the young woman can have the choice of whether or not to keep the baby. They keep many of the abortion avenues open to appease the masses. Do we believe the Bible or not?

When someone asks, “But what about the mother? What if her life is in danger?” Christians and Republicans alike stammer and stutter, afraid to espouse their true beliefs in the matter. These are hard situations indeed, but friends, let’s not muddy the issue. Unborn life is life and it deserves to be protected, with no exceptions. Many politicians will flip-flop on this uncomfortable issue because they do not wish to offend anyone. But what is

a belief if we will not stand for it and defend it?

The Moral Dilemma

What results is a moral dilemma. Whatever the motivation may be- not wanting to offend, wanting to get re-elected, or trying to please everyone- the wavering of opinions on this issue by Republicans is dangerous. Many politicians believe that “You don’t overturn precedence unless there is a good reason.” Friends, this is dangerous. We live in a free country where our voice is not only heard but asked for, and we can overturn precedence. What is the good reason for overturning Roe v. Wade? Saving the lives of millions of innocent babies is the only reason! These children are fearfully and wonderfully formed by the same Creator who formed you- is that not reason enough?

Any leader that says you can believe that the laws of man (legal precedence) should override the moral law of God (killing unborn children) is not a leader who stands for my conservative beliefs. We must challenge this way of progressive thinking. We call these “conservatives”, “left-of-center” Republicans. They do not represent the moral majority. Their views are dangerous to the Republican Party because they pretend to care about every life, then turn around and sacrifice the lives of those who cannot speak for themselves on the altar of moral compromise or political opportunism.

In conclusion, trying to ride the fence on an issue like abortion that is so important and fundamental to the Republican Party is indefensible. Charles H. Spurgeon said it best, “Character is always lost when a high ideal is sacrificed on the altar of conformity and popularity.” The moral majority in the state of South Carolina should not stand for our leadership sacrificing moral ideals on an altar of popularity and conformity to get re-elected. This is reprehensible!

The Global Warming Two-Step

However extensive the constitutional power of a government to impose taxes may be, I think it should not be so exercised as to impede or discourage the lawful and useful industry and exertions of individuals. hence, the prudence of taxing the products of beneficial labor, either mental or manual, appears to be at least questionable... Whether taxation should extend only to property, or only to income, are points on which opinions have not been uniform. I am inclined to think that both should not be taxed. – John Jay

As we approach the topic of global warming, it is my opinion that we see Republicans on both sides of the issue of global warming. One step is a big belief in global warming and a tax on our carbon footprint (cap and trade). This leads to excessive taxation. A second step (the one I adhere to) is seeing global warming as extremist and shutting down any/all legislative initiatives that would prop up its viability. However, the constant back and forth of quasi-conservative Republicans is confusing. As a Christian, I believe we should care for the earth. We should take the environment seriously and ensure we are preserving the earth for future generations. However, placing a tax on carbon that limits economic growth and proposing bogus initiatives that drain taxpayers is not the answer.

A Step Forward:

Most conservative Republicans will tell you that they do not support Cap & Trade legislation. They refuse earmarks that dump money into green initiatives and reject legislation like the Green New Deal. Good for them! We do not need this kind of regulatory policy suffocating our economy.

One Step Back:

However, there are some left-of-center Republicans who believe that “climate change is real.” Unfortunately, this thinking threatens everything from the economy to national security. Their proposal is a market-based system in which mass polluters comply with restrictive radical environmental regulations without compromise. What do you think their definition of a market-based system entails? A market-based system is code for excessive taxation!

The Two-Step:

We see that some Republicans are trying to remain true to their base by denying the cries of environmental desolation from the left, but they also propose that greenhouse gases are real and the planet is indeed warming, bringing about the need for a price on carbon. I believe they do this to win votes come election season. But what is the truth?

Bottom Line:

Republicans hate excessive taxation! That is a fact! We can see language in both the SC and National Republican Party Platforms that confirms this fact.

The South Carolina Republican Party Platform:

“We are the party of opportunity and support a tax policy designed to help the economy grow, not stunt the taxpayer or punish achievement. We believe high taxation of both income and capital growth slows economic growth and job creation and call for both lower and less progressive taxation.”

The National Republican Party Platform:

“Republicans consider the establishment of a pro-growth tax code a moral imperative. More than any other public policy, the way government raises revenue — how much, at what rates, under what circumstances, from whom, and for whom — has the greatest impact on our economy’s performance. It powerfully influences the level of economic growth and job creation, which translates into the level of opportunity for those who would otherwise be left behind. Getting our tax system right will be the most important factor in driving the entire economy back to prosperity.”

As Republicans, we must agree that while we indeed need to ensure we are caring for the earth and being smart about what we do, we do not support excessive taxation and mass government regulation over our activities as a way to ‘preserve the earth.’ Republicans figured out a long time ago that the democrat party use ‘green initiatives’ as a way to increase government intervention in the free-market economy and to have a hand in the daily lives of Americans. Their intent is not to make the world a better place. The motives are purely about money and power. We need to wise up as Republicans and realize when we are being sold a lie by quasi-Republicans who’d love a slice of the money and power. The global warming initiatives being pushed by the left are nothing more than a redistribution of corporate and personal wealth. Getting anywhere close to that global warming ‘fire’ is not good public policy for conservatives.”

Section III

POLITICS

OUR FERVOR

POLITICS: OUR FERVOR – Section III

Is there any other word in the English language that conjures up a more negative, sinister, and nefarious thought than the word politics? Well, in the political environment of today that is the dirty part of trying to lead in the realm of governance. Our team experienced a full-frontal assault by the Republican establishment. I hate to even include the words leadership and politics in the same sentence since I am convinced that politics is not true leadership.

Team LaPierre remains convinced that public service is the appropriate means to leading our country forward. All of the elements that we traditionally think of when we hear the word politics should be reserved for those who adore the power, recognition, and status of being a public figure. We happen to believe that a good dose of citizen leadership would far and away outshine and outperform those professional political operatives who put self-preservation, self-aggrandizement, and reelection (how about term limits) at the front of their priority list.

We believe that you will be shocked, dismayed, and bewildered at the lengths our own party went to derail our campaign. It resembles a scene out of the movie, *Mr. Smith Goes to Washington*. Yes, both amusing and concerning at the same time.

I ask that you pay special attention to the tactics used by the establishment for future and key learning. It will also help you identify those in our party that need to move on to different pastures. Yes, I am recommending a “cleanup” in the leadership ranks of the South Carolina Republican Party of all who do not support all of our party platform issues. You cannot lead our party and

not believe in the totality of our platform. That would simply be hypocritical in nature.

Simply put, those of you who do not believe in our party platform have our permission to leave- and to leave now! We need true patriots.

Our Campaign Pledge

I know no safe depository of the ultimate powers of society but the people themselves; and if we think them not enlightened enough to exercise their control with a wholesome discretion, the remedy is not to take it from them, but to inform their discretion by education.

-Thomas Jefferson, Letter to W. C. Jarvis, September 28, 1820

During my run for the U.S. Senate seat in the state of South Carolina, I made a commitment to my supporters that I would bring back the idea of what it means to be a public servant. I have no desire to be a politician. I want to see the honorable positions that once were held in high esteem by freedom-loving patriots brought back to the U.S. House and U.S. Senate. I also want to see the time-honored values and principles in the Republican Party platform be protected through legislative measures. I love and embrace the entire Republican Party platform and all that it stands for! Therefore, I wrote the following pledge to the people of South Carolina:

- Honor Christ in everything we do (Romans 11:36)
- Redefine what it means to be a United States Senator from the beautiful state of South Carolina
- Articulate a message of “inspired conservatism” through the principles of God’s Word and bring that approach directly into the legislative process
- Establish a defined set of governing principles by building a recognizable

and consistent “brand”

- Create a leader’s vision to help cast the hope and confidence of a brighter tomorrow
- Demonstrate a statesmanlike approach to governing while holding the office of U.S. Senator that our children, grandchildren, and people from all walks of life can admire, revere, and look up to
- Work tirelessly to overturn Roe v. Wade
- Oppose all forms of legislation that are aimed at controlling our guns, limiting our right to bear arms, and the right to due process under the law
- The Team LaPierre political committee will assemble a team of political consultants, advisors, and volunteers who abide by the rule of law, are concerned with rebuilding the moral and spiritual foundations of South Carolina and desire to manifest lives that are above reproach
- Drive and support legislation that will help South Carolinians thrive economically
- Oppose import tariffs that threaten great harm to our state
- Propose and support all legislation that removes regulatory barriers and unnecessary red tape
- Support a constitutional amendment that defines marriage between a man and a woman
- Advocate for an educational system that brings primary responsibility back to the state level through strategic initiatives including vouchers, ESA accounts, tax credits, and private school choice options that helps raise the educational performance bar in South Carolina for both students and teachers
- Oppose the equality act and any of its alternative forms so that we can keep South Carolina anchored to the principles of God’s Word and the moral and spiritual foundations necessary to help us thrive and grow
- Legislate for the security of our sovereign borders through the construction of a wall; the deportation of those who are in our country illegally; close loopholes detrimental to legal immigration and our national safety; rewrite the existing asylum laws; and use all diplomatic, economic, and

OUR CAMPAIGN PLEDGE

national emergency means necessary (military) to keep our country from harm

- Champion the cause of prayer in our public schools; Bible education through Released Time programs and other faith-based training models; along with a traditional view of history and how Christian principles have been the “salt and light” that guided our country toward American exceptionalism
- As a former athlete at both the collegiate and professional levels, be the torchbearer for those parents who do not want to see their children exposed to the unfair and harmful effects of transgenderism in public facilities and sporting events
- Limit myself to 2 terms and propose legislation for term limits at the congressional level that will help diminish the influence of lobbyists, professional political operatives, and other institution bureaucrats who are more concerned with power than they are with laws that promote the general welfare of our great state and country
- Donate a majority of my salary to charity and other nonprofit institutions in order to take a leadership position on this issue and set the tone for future elected Senators from South Carolina and beyond
- Refuse the elite health care program offered to U.S. Senators and maintain my current middle-class participant “share program”
- Expose the socialist element on our shores and work to educate the people of South Carolina and America of its devastating and negative impact on liberty, freedom, and economic mobility
- Support a strong military (peace through strength as a deterrent) and take care of our veterans (we must take care of our veterans)
- Oppose Supreme Court Justices that have a predisposition toward a progressive, liberal, and elastic view of our Constitution vs. a traditional and originalist approach
- Be true to my beliefs and make decisions that are good for South Carolina without the intrusion of alternative political ambition and motive
- Strive to be a public servant and servant leader vs. a politician and professional political operative

In sum, I am advocating for “The New Frontier of Christian Conservatism” that helps restore the principles of God’s Word, morality, a love for our fellow citizens, and an allegiance to the underlining principles of the Republican Party platform. May God bless you!

Redefinition of a U.S. Senator

When once a man has cast a longing eye on offices, a rottenness begins in his conduct.

-Thomas Jefferson

It is in the hearts of all men to be succumbed to the dangers of fame and notoriety, self-aggrandization and conceit, from the moment they hear their name called upon the rolls of delegate to any high office. Humans crave power and the ability to wield it. From the moment of birth, we are in a “me first” mentality. The child through adolescence craves attention and sufficiency for his needs. Upon becoming an adult, he then seeks to provide for his own needs, but the result is the same- how to provide for ME. This is the result of sin nature, is it not? That we spend our lives toiling overwork to provide for our most necessities in life? Indeed, we were created for a higher calling, but along with it comes the need (and desire) to provide for oneself first. All after is the ambition of career and charity of heart. It is the ambition and drive for “something more” in addition to the base need for provision that drives many to power hunger, greed, fame, and corruption.

Washington is a prime example of man’s desire to succeed and rule, and the title “politician” has come to embody the definition of corruption and greed. Our founding fathers knew this and thus put into place measures that would limit one man’s and one group’s monopoly of power over other men. Over time we have allowed the partitions to rise that divide men and create chaos

in society. We must recommission the higher calling to statesmanship and civil society. This is not me proclaiming something new, pretending to be superior, or act as if I am immune to such ambitions. I believe in my heart, no man is immune. However, by God's gracious hand of provision and leading over my life, He directs me to paths of this recommissioning and summons me to statesmanship.

The following chapters detail how I felt led to run as a statesman and the difference between seeking what our founders intended in a public servant and a modern-day Washington politician. This is the platform upon which my team and I ran for public office.

A Renewal of the S.C Republican Party

There is danger from all men. The only maxim of a free government ought to be to trust no man living with power to endanger the public liberty. -John Adams

I have been a lifelong conservative Republican who absolutely loves what our party platform stands for. Make no mistake, I bleed RED! It is because of my passion and desire to see our party grow and prosper that I write about what it means to be a “true” conservative Republican. While we are making much progress in key vital areas, the following encouragement and consultation is to help us get to the next level of dominance in South Carolina politics and beyond with conservative principles. I believe that my training, knowledge, and experience allow me to generate keen insights and opinions on how to create a pathway forward. We hope that you enjoy the following opinion editorial!

I have been extremely privileged to have had some of the most fascinating training and work-related experiences in life. I am both a trained political scientist from an Ivy League school (Brown University) and a trained global strategist (Fortune 500 and Fortune 50 companies, respectively) who understands political strategy. As a former VP of Sales at a Fortune 500 company, I also recognize that team building is the catalyst to unleashing unparalleled levels of excitement, bonding, and results.

Here are my recommendations and opinions for a more robust and inclusive

approach to GOP strength and growth in South Carolina politics.

I. It is my opinion that we need to move from a backdoor party boss approach to South Carolina politics (the good ole boy and girl's network) to one that is much more inclusive and respectful of everyone's opinions and participation

For those GOP leaders who have grasped this concept, I appreciate you. As I traveled the beautiful state of South Carolina for my U.S Senate run in 2019/2020, I experienced the openness and inclusion of many GOP leaders, which did not go unnoticed. Many in the GOP ranks embrace such an approach. However, we still have some in GOP leadership who just don't get it. They are stuck in the political abyss of yesteryear. Manipulating elections toward pet candidates, manipulating primary races for establishment candidates, and silencing the voices of good quality candidates is their modus operandi. It is our opinion that they are awash with the political ambition that destroys the very lifeblood of the Republican Party. Leveraging their undue and unwarranted political influence; using questionable and egregious methods of voting manipulation; along with underhanded and petty tactics, are all part of their political arsenal.

This begs a most serious and fundamental question of who we are as a party. Will the back door and manipulative approach to South Carolina politics be attractive to ordinary citizens? The answer is clearly, no! It will limit our growth to only those on the "inside" and will continue the expectations of a "who you know" 1950's political ideology. We are better than this! The South Carolina Election Commission speaks about the need to have free, fair, and impartial election processes. How can we as a party declare that we are following such important dictates when we have people in positions of GOP leadership, who by their actions, do not agree? Republican Party members have had enough of this old and dying way of operating in the political domain. We need to show our members that we are moving toward a new frontier of political strategy and tactics.

II. We need to capitalize on the depth and breadth of political experience, expertise, knowledge, and talent regardless of the length of time served or

affiliation with a local GOP County

In other words, if there are people in this state that are committed to getting results and working to move our party forward, let's bring them to the front of the line and let them lead. Let folks with talent and expertise have an impact. Why would we not want this to happen? Isn't this free market politics at its finest? The reason for this happening is that party politics promotes personal ambition, ego, jealousy, and ignorance. The GOP leadership that I referred to earlier is failing to embrace the younger generation and those with extraordinary levels of talent. They are content with telling party members to jump in the back of the line and earn their stripes. If you are an outsider, they consider you either to be irrelevant or not viable. Once again, they are stuck in the political abyss of yesteryear. Harvard Business School laments about this very issue! Why are millennials jumping from job to job and seem to have so little commitment to organizations? The answer is because they are told to jump in the back of the line and earn their stripes. Millennials with talent have a well-known propensity to desire high-level participation very early on in their careers. If they do not see that they are having an impact at the highest levels of their organizations with their specific levels of expertise, they will leave. When organizations (business, political, or otherwise) purposefully attempt to hold down and quash the upward mobility of those with talent, who are committed to the cause, they are met with very weak growth numbers, turnout, and political infighting. This politically repressive approach can be seen in some South Carolina political arenas around the state. You know who you are!

There are young people in South Carolina making a difference on local levels- those youth with extraordinary leadership skills are building the foundations of our party for the long-term. The GOP leaders allowing fresh ideas and political newcomer involvement understand the importance of organizational health while infighting in their respective areas of responsibilities is held to a minimum. These special leaders do not try to repress or control other leaders who want to have a voice. On the other hand, those stuck in the political mire and muck of yesteryear are experiencing one of two things. First, because of their ambition, they have alienated many in their

party and the political infighting is rampant. Second, they are so entrenched in the party boss style of control and manipulation that they are “shrinking themselves to greatness.” In other words, the attendance and enthusiasm are lackluster at best because of their “style” of politics.

III. The South Carolina Republican Party needs to build a robust talent bench for the future

As a new management trainee early in my corporate career, I learned that business was entirely about people. The same thing applies in the political domain. Politics is entirely about people. If South Carolina is to be the best in class, we need to get to the next level of talent acquisition and succession planning. Those with talent must be identified, trained, and plugged into the respective positions that fit their idiosyncratic bents. In other words, if we put people in positions of leadership before they are ready or put them in the wrong positions, we are setting ourselves up for failure. Some GOP leaders would be terrific Parliamentarians or even Robert’s Rules of Order fact-checkers. They would be awesome in that role. However, these individuals may not be suited to lead with the vision necessary to get results and build a local party. Others are “hangers-on” that are out of touch with real-world politics. You know who you are!

IV. Allow maximum autonomy while giving clear and direct political guidance

We never want to be seen as micromanaging the local GOP leadership apparatus. However, if there are leaders stuck in the 1950’s good ole boy and girl’s leadership philosophy and are demonstrating tactics that are harmful to the party, intervention and remedial training must immediately take place. Allowing political cancer to spread is a death blow to local GOP organizations.

V. We need GOP leaders that can cast a vision for the future

We need more than managers at the helm for those in positions of authority at both the state and local levels. We need folks that can embrace technology, build teams, and move toward a more generous and inclusive approach. We also need folks who will not succumb to the baser instincts of

manipulating elections toward pet candidates, manipulating primary races for establishment candidates, and using party boss tactics to keep people in line. This is not leadership. These tactics are something that you would see from Stalinist Russia.

VI. GOP leadership needs to provide clear guidance for those running in primary races

Leadership has a responsibility to inform, train, and provide an awareness of all of the candidates for local, state, and national level elections. In my opinion, failing to do so manipulates the fair and impartial election processes in our state. Equal time should be given to opposing voices. Currently, some GOP leaders are silencing the voices of the opposition. Once again, these tactics are something that you would see from Stalinist Russia. Ambition, ego, and the power to control and manipulate results is their end game.

In conclusion, we have a party platform that is second to none and we need to encourage members to embrace the principles and values of our entire platform. We have a majority of GOP leaders who have the depth of understanding to get to the next level of success. We simply need to encourage, train, and/or remove those that are stuck in the quicksand of the past. This is a true and honest opinion of how to get better results, more participation, and a broader spectrum of Republican Party talent. God bless South Carolina!

The Nullification Strategy

The sacred rights of mankind are not to be rummaged for among old parchments or musty records. they are written, as with a sunbeam, in the whole volume of human nature, by the hand of the divinity itself, and can never be erased or obscured by mortal power.

-Alexander Hamilton

Our country is currently experiencing the most prolific and heart-wrenching attempt to destabilize our institutions, constitutional framework, and the Judeo-Christian values set forth by our Founding Fathers' never-before-seen. We are in a cultural and spiritual war like no time in our history. The radical progressive forces are trying to redefine America in a way that whitewashes and destroys her virtue, history, distinctiveness, and God-ordained attributes that set her apart from other nations of the world. The secular humanists among us have propagated a belief system and worldview that has infiltrated our primary school systems, media outlets, entertainment centers, public universities, and have embedded themselves in the institutions of government.

The progressive left and the democrat socialists are attacking the foundations of America. They have come to hate America and what she stands for and want to transform the very essence of her greatness. Take a look at the left's 4-pronged attack and the diabolical methods they are using to destabilize and nullify foundational aspects of our distinct and great country:

1. Nullifying the Presidency

Trump is a populist who is overseeing one of the most profound conservative moments in modern history. His conservative agenda has unleashed an excitement and a stirring among patriots in America not seen since the years of the Reagan presidency. Many would argue that the results Trump has put up in such a short period of time have even eclipsed that of Ronald Reagan. The left hates Trump and they hate all those who support him. We are considered the “deplorables.” Progressive liberals are working overtime to get Trump out of office because they know that they can’t win in 2020. When the democrat leadership looks at their presidential “lineup” they realize they are in trouble and can’t win. The only thing left for them to do is attack and nullify!

2. Nullifying the Constitution

The progressive left and the democrat socialists want to fundamentally alter the Constitution of the United States of America. They want to control and manipulate our Bill of Rights found in the Constitutional Amendments. Religious liberties, free speech, freedom of the press, 2nd Amendment gun rights, Due Process, legal immigration, and the rudiments of law and order are being undermined. They are determined to have an interpretation of the Constitution that is a living and breathing version with the elasticity necessary to fit the Constitution to the culture. Having Supreme Court Justices who uphold a traditional and originalist interpretation is an anathema to them.

3. Nullifying Capitalism

The redistribution of corporate and personal wealth is vital to their overall strategy. The progressives want to change the rules of the game from equal opportunity to equal wealth. The only way to achieve this is to mastermind a supreme plan that indentures its citizenry to the purse strings and regulatory environment of big government. Global warming and the Green New Deal are their answer. The price tag is anywhere from \$50 to 90 trillion dollars (depending on what goodies get thrown into the cauldron). They also want a tax on our carbon footprint. There have been other times in

the history of America where politicians have laid the groundwork for a socialist orientation. The New Deal (Roosevelt), The Fair Deal (Truman), The Great Society (Johnson), and the Affordable Care Act (Obama) were a few of the attempts to put the death grip of socialism on our shores. While each of the attempts listed above inched us closer to a totalitarian form of government, the citizens of America always rose to the occasion and course-corrected socialism's long-term impact. I believe that we are seeing the same thing happen in this period of American history. Patriots are galvanized and standing up and saying "no" to this despicable form of government.

4. Nullifying God's Word

Ultimately, the progressive left and the anti-God faction of America are trying to redefine human existence by destroying the principles found in God's Word. Every core principle of Divine Creation found in His Word is being rooted out under the guise of inclusion. The progressive left wants us to live in an alternate and subjective reality where there is no longer right and wrong, male and female, marriage between a male and a female, or a belief in absolute truth and a Creator God. They want us to believe in the Secular Humanist Manifestos I, II, and III and their religious dogma. Relativism, homosexuality, transgenderism, atheism, paganism, along with a focus on the greatness of mankind and their secular objectives is the agenda.

As patriots, we can never let this happen. We must stand tall and fight for the liberties and freedoms that our forefathers so gallantly fought and died to protect. We must have the moral, spiritual, and cultural discernment necessary to lead our fellow citizens back to the ideals of our Founding Fathers. We need a recommissioning and alignment back to the conservative values and policy positions that made America great in the first place.

Reframing True Conservatism

Freedom is never more than one generation away from extinction. We didn't pass it to our children in the bloodstream. It must be fought for, protected, and handed on for them to do the same, or one day we will spend our sunset years telling our children and our children's children what it was once like in the United States where men were free.

— Ronald Reagan

Would President Ronald Reagan understand and relate to the conservative narrative being pushed by many in the Republican Party today? What is “true” conservatism all about, anyway? What are the primary components and tenets of a political ideology that makes America great?

Former President Reagan was a master at throwing down the gauntlet for change and challenging citizens to make the United States of America a better place to live. Many times, his vision for change went beyond our borders to include change in other parts of the world. Do you remember the famous challenge that he laid out to Mikhail Gorbachev of the Soviet Union when he said, “Mr. Gorbachev – Tear down this wall?” Reagan had a vision for the “Eastern Bloc” countries in Europe under Soviet domination. He knew that the winds of reform were in the air and was trying to inspire the Europeans to make real and long-lasting change. What we do know about President

Reagan is that he had a set of core beliefs and principles that helped motivate people toward common human decency. He often talked about his belief in the Creator of this universe.

Reagan's vision for America was anchored in the principles of the Bible which helped frame his worldview, both in private and in public. For him, true conservatism was about creating the enabling processes that allowed for maximum personal freedom and liberty, family values, life, democracy, human rights, and making sure that the free market forces of capitalism were at optimum conditions and strength. Let us now compare Reagan's version of conservatism with those "left-of-center" conservatives (so-called) who seem to want to hijack the conservative narrative for self-serving purposes:

Reagan – He was a pro-life President who thought that Roe v. Wade should be overturned

L.O.C. Conservatives – Left of center conservatives say they are pro-life but do NOT think Roe v. Wade should be overturned "unless there is some good reason."

Reagan – He believed in the sanctity of marriage

L.O.C. Conservatives – L.O.C. conservatives will not stand up and say that the Republican Party platform should be changed to support an amendment to the Constitution defining marriage to be between a man and a woman

Reagan – Reagan had a contempt for the environmental movement and wanted to roll back as much environmental regulation as possible, pushing control back to the states

L.O.C. Conservatives – L.O.C. conservatives support an Obama position on our carbon footprint and want President Trump to admit that global warming is real and find a solution

REFRAMING TRUE CONSERVATISM

Reagan – His economic policy was defined as one of the most conservative forms of free-market capitalism ever initiated

L.O.C. Conservatives – L.O.C. conservatives seek economic policies that benefit their own pockets and are not much different from those in the democrat party on this issue

In summary, the vision that our leaders have for the United States of America has a direct impact on how our culture will be shaped. The future of our children and grandchildren depends upon us. Pastor Jonathan Mayhew exclaimed, “You are assigned by Divine Providence, in the appointed order of things, the protector of unborn ages, whose fate depends on your virtue.”! We must defend the causes of freedom and liberty at every turn with values that reflect “true” conservatism.

The brand of conservatism that I am talking about is born out of an inner core of understanding and belief that does not shift with the political winds of change. Any of the alternative forms of conservatism (fake conservatism) can be spotted a mile away. We should never let left-of-center professional political operatives re-frame what true conservatism is all about. We need a change in South Carolina and we need it fast!

Political Drift

Men by their constitutions are naturally divided into two parties: 1. Those who fear and distrust the people, and wish to draw all powers from them into the hands of the higher classes. 2. Those who identify themselves with the people, have confidence in them, cherish and consider them as the most honest and safe, although not the most wise depository of the public interests. In every country these two parties exist; and in every one where they are free to think, speak, and write, they will declare themselves.

-Thomas Jefferson

As I traveled across the beautiful state of South Carolina while campaigning in 2019/2020, I often heard a common phrase among its citizens. The phrase, “it’s about time” is one that echoes repeatedly among those citizens who are ready for change. They continue to say that “it’s about time that career politicians retire.” I couldn’t agree more. It is my opinion that the “political drift” showcased by multi-term Senators and experienced by the SC voters is unlike anything we have seen in our state’s history. We will call them “left-of-center” conservatives (L.O.C.).

Many “conservative” political operatives decided to make an alliance with the late Senator, John McCain, who would influence their policy positions. Many went from being true and consistent conservative Republicans to being so far left of center that it is hard to tell the difference between them and the

democrat socialists on our shores on many issues. Let us research whether or not the last opinion can be supported by what we see in the political arena.

- L.O.C. conservatives advocate for RED FLAG laws (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives want to give illegal aliens amnesty (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives want to propose legislation that circumvents our current internet privacy laws and encryption (so would the democrat socialists – Diane Feinstein)
- L.O.C. conservatives want to tax our carbon footprint (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives do NOT want Roe v. Wade overturned (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives voted to confirm Sotomayer and Kagan (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives do NOT want the Republican Party platform to define marriage between a man and a woman (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives supported the Muslim Brotherhood in Egypt (so would the democrat socialists)
- L.O.C. conservatives have failed to investigate the Ukrainian corruption and the Joe/Hunter Biden connection (so would the democrat socialists)

Most conservatives in South Carolina agree that “it’s about time” we call on our senators and representatives to stand up to socialist policies and call out the Republicans who vote left of center. We must hold our elected officials accountable. In my opinion, when they don’t perform their duties in line with the party’s belief system and no longer represent us and our values, we must vote them out! America is unique in that she allows her people the great privilege to participate in the governmental process by electing officials that represent their values and meet their needs. When this doesn’t happen, they can vote for new leadership. But we must participate in order for the system

to work for us! Consider this a clarion call to all my fellow conservatives to regain confidence in the political system and re-involve themselves in the political process. We must reclaim our country and derail the socialist agenda.

The Winds of Change

If we continue to be a happy people, that happiness must be assured by the enacting and executing of reasonable and wise laws, expressed in the plainest language, and by establishing such modes of education as tend to inculcate in the minds of youth, the feelings and habits of “piety, religion, and morality,” and to lead them to the knowledge and love of those truly Republican principles upon which our civil institutions are founded.

-Samuel Adams

There is a political movement and recognizable change happening, never before seen, in our beautiful state and country. There is a convergence of spiritual, cultural, and political forces that are creating an anti-establishment and anti-incumbent fervor that is gripping the citizens of America. First, the long, intrusive, and tyrannical arm of the United States government has placed itself right in the middle of our daily lives and our homes (Covid-19). It is an unwelcome intrusion and one that a majority of South Carolinians and Americans want to eliminate. This intrusion is infringing upon some of the most foundational and sacred privileges known to our countrymen and countrywomen.

Right now, “We the People” are rising up and saying “enough is enough”. As free South Carolinians and free Americans, we are yearning to be free once again and to be able to live out and exercise the freedoms expressed in

the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution of the United States of America. “We the People” see the entrenched establishment, professional political operatives, and the political elite as the problem and not part of the solution. We currently have a lack of conservative leaders who are conforming to the secular humanist demands of the progressive left and it is both concerning and shameful.

Next, we have fear, mob rule, and a left-leaning media that is framing the conversation and debate. They are using crises to push South Carolinians and Americans toward a socialist orientation. They are trying to lower our standards and our high expectations toward what they consider to be the “new normal.”

As a result of the spiritual, cultural, and political conditions that currently exist, our citizens are galvanized and united with a tie that binds our hearts toward a conservative America. “We the People” want to recommission and align our thinking back to the ideals of our Founding Fathers and protect our liberties, our freedoms, and our privacy. That is the context in which a smoldering ember has ignited. Let’s not extinguish that flame. May we embrace the spirit of our Founding Fathers and band together for freedom’s cause to fight for the liberties we hold so dear.

The Art of Sophistry

What we obtain too cheap, we esteem too lightly: it is dearness only that gives every thing its value. Heaven knows how to put a proper price upon its goods; and it would be strange indeed if so celestial an article as freedom should not be highly rated. -Thomas Paine

Back in the days of the Greek philosophers, there was a growing sect of the population who would deviate from studied and reasoned argument and debate. These “crafty” individuals would succumb to methods of communication that would overwhelm their audiences with incredible storylines and fallacious methods of reasoning. In other words, these individuals leaned toward methods of communication that represented more style than an overabundance of substance. When it comes to being a “true and consistent” conservative Republican in their policy positions, it is my opinion that many “left-of-center” and quasi-Republicans try to camouflage their true political convictions in favor of sophistry.

The art of sophistry in the political realm in many respects is the twin sister to demagoguery. Let’s take a look at the definition of each.

Sophistry – A subtle, tricky, superficially plausible, but generally a fallacious method of reasoning, a false argument;

Demagoguery – to rhetorically exploit (an issue) for political purposes

in a way calculated to appeal to the desires and prejudices of ordinary people:

I believe that many “left-of-center” Republicans exploit their positions of power and claim to be true conservatives in the Republican Party. That’s right! Many of these politicians claim to be conservative Republicans after the tradition of Ronald Reagan. However, the results of their voting records tell an entirely different story. They even go to great lengths on national television to practice the art and sheen of presentation i.e., the style and subterfuge of sophistry.

What happens when they have to demonstrate their “so-called” conservative values through various pieces of legislation? Here is what happens. All of the sheen, shine, and presentation of their conservative Republican values dissipate in front of our very eyes! We must ask of these politicians, “whose best interests do you have at heart?”

For example, when President Donald Trump had the democrats right where he wanted them as the impeachment process was moving to the Senate and certain republicans could call witnesses to expose all of the corruption on both sides of the aisle, they did not. Rather, they wanted to sweep the whole matter (corruption) under the rug! They didn’t want to call the cadre of witnesses necessary to expose their democrat party friends. In 2020, more than ever, many Republicans showed their true colors. We must not be fooled by the art of sophistry they weave as they seek their own political motives. It is time for us to expose their demagoguery for what it is and call on them to either stand by the conservative ideals they say they represent or get out!

The Primary Process

Educate and inform the whole mass of the people... They are the only sure reliance for the preservation of our liberty.

-Thomas Jefferson

What I find fascinating in many high-stakes political campaigns is that long-term political operatives (incumbents) often sit out their respective party's primary. That's right! They limit their campaign time during the primary to bare-bones communication with their constituents. Many long-term politicians limit their face time because they and/or their campaign advisors know (especially those with high unfavorable numbers) that any appearance will potentially galvanize the opposition and risk them losing their seats. In their minds, they see very little upside because it is all about getting reelected. Perhaps there is a perspective that the competition is irrelevant and are not serious contenders. Maybe they believe that they are simply untouchable and have the primary victory in the bag. Some may have such a bloated perception of "self" that they feel the primary process is beneath them. Others have their heads in national politics and are not concerned with the good folks of their respective states. However, doesn't participation in our primary process further support the foundational elements of our Constitutional Republic?

Educating the citizenry is a critical component of our country's primary process. Each candidate gets to showcase his/her understanding of the issues

in plain sight. It also helps the electorate challenge an incumbent's voting record and holds them accountable for previous campaign promises. It simply provides the transparency we need in America to become informed citizens and make the best possible election choices. Mailing in the primary by not showing up or limiting primary participation does nothing to move our great country forward.

"If we are to guard against ignorance and remain free, it is the responsibility of every American to be informed." -Thomas Jefferson

Furthermore, it is my opinion that political parties and their leaders should never endorse a candidate during the primary process. Sending out mailers or other forms of communication/support and stifling opposition voices to an incumbent during a primary does nothing to foster a vibrant and informed citizenry. I believe that incumbents should earn their primary victories with hard work on the campaign trail and not rest on their laurels. All candidates should be willing to hear directly from "We the People" of their respective states. It supports our American ideals of transparency, competition, fair play, and is always the right thing to do.

When Party Disciplines Rule

Nothing so strongly impels a man to regard the interests of his constituents, as the certainty of returning to the general mass of the people, from whence he was taken, where he must participate in their burdens.

-George Mason

During the SC Senate primary battle, there were GOP leaders who contacted me in the last several weeks to have me speak and share my personal story at their monthly meetings while some in the GOP have not allowed me to speak at all. For those who did, I can't begin to tell you how much that meant to our campaign. These leaders exhibited a fair and balanced approach to the 2020 SC Senate primary process. The following opinion editorial helps frame what Team LaPierre believes it experienced in the campaign.

Unfortunately, I believe that much of the primary process was nothing more than a mixed bag of censorship, delay, and manipulation. The campaign strategy and messaging that we wanted to implement/articulate in the 2019/2020 election cycle was a convergence of faith and public policy in the political arena. Couple those (faith and public policy) with some unexpected and unfortunate detours along the way and you get a brand of South Carolina Politics that I am not entirely comfortable with. We can do better!

1. Policy Differences

We stood strong in our assault on the progressive leftist policy positions and voting records of “left-of-center” and quasi-Republican politicians. We took a conservative, Republican Party platform, and constitutional position on the following issues:

- a. No - to Red Flag Laws
- b. Yes - to overturning Roe v. Wade
- c. No – to Gang of Eight Ideology (wanting to give citizenship to millions of illegals)
- d. No – to supporting Sotomayer and Kagan (arguably two of the most progressive liberal justices in Supreme Court history)
- e. No – to a tax on our carbon footprint
- f. Yes – to a marriage amendment (we want the Republican Party platform to introduce or take up discussion of a Constitution Amendment defining marriage between a man and a woman)

2. Family Values

Our campaign continues to demonstrate a clear and decisive need for Senate leadership in Washington DC who has the depth and breadth of spiritual understanding to lead us to higher ground.

- a. Repair the moral and spiritual foundations of our great state/country
- b. Rebuild our public schools and an educational system that is inclusive of all ways of life and walks of faith (beyond secular humanist indoctrination)
- c. Fight to dismantle the equality act and all of its derivative forms (this is an affront to religious freedom)
- d. Restore religious liberty and the individual freedoms (Bill of Rights) that our Founding Fathers so closely guarded and that so many have perished to defend and safeguard
- e. Use the office of U.S. Senator and the corresponding bully pulpit to inspire people to be the best version of themselves, to impact our culture, and take a statesmanlike approach in getting those results

3. Unexpected Detours

We believe that the unexpected and unfortunate detours in this campaign came at the expense of some in my own party (i.e., The Republican Party).

a. Movement afoot within GOP leadership ranks that have politicized the right of opposing voices to incumbents an opportunity to speak and campaign within party ranks

b. Decisions and actions that have been taken (below) which we believe have compromised the SC Senate primary process by “slanting” the narrative and potentially impacting primary results

As GOP leaders, I believe that we have a responsibility to conduct primary races that are seen as fair, neutral, and impartial. Our role should be to help educate the Republican electorate within our respective counties on all of the candidates and their respective policy positions. Our role is not to try and pick winners and losers based on preconceived notions of who we think the viable candidates may be. By doing so, we are depriving our base of constituents an opportunity for getting exposure to a wide range of alternative policy positions.

I want to cut right to the chase. It is my opinion that there was direct pressure on GOP leadership to get behind the incumbent in his bid for another term as the U.S. Senator from South Carolina. The long arm of the SCGOP political machinery reached its ugly tentacles into the democratic process that we call the SC Republican Senate primary. What was once an open, frank, and candid discussion that showcased the depth and breadth of a candidate’s talents has digressed into the harbingers of party discipline. As we will discuss in the remainder of this discourse, the Republican Senate primary was “effectively” canceled by the actions of some who were opposed to allowing the opposition to the incumbent to speak. Can we not even agree within our own party that we need to have new and fresh perspectives?

The words, actions, premeditations, and the overall manipulation of a pure and wholesome American process by some, now have the scars of a morally bankrupt scam. The various derivative forms of the aforementioned Senate primary “fix” are crystal clear. What was most amazing about the entire primary process was the brazen and strategic approach that some (not all)

in the GOP leadership had conspired to carry out! Let's recap just a few of those events and also peel the onion back on some of the leader's specific behaviors and/or tactics.

Tactic – Choosing which candidates they feel are viable before allowing them to speak

Impact – Limiting the panoramic view, policy discussions, and key learnings for SC citizens on a wide range of candidates. i.e., limits exposure for opposing voices to gain any traction

Tactic – Some in GOP leadership are sitting on a committee to re-elect the incumbent

Impact – The SCGOP machine imposing its will and the leadership feeling pressure to succumb to party discipline. How can a GOP leader preside with neutral and impartial sensibilities during the primary race if sitting on the committee to reelect? It is a clear and direct conflict of interest.

Tactic – Some GOP leaders are not letting the opposition Republican primary candidates to the incumbent have any speaking opportunity until after the March 2020 filing period.

Impact – Trying to manipulate the outcome of the election by limiting the time that opposition voices can be heard. In other words, within party ranks the ability to generate any real momentum is curtailed to a timeframe of 10-12 weeks. That is right, 10-12 weeks to try and unseat a 3-term U.S. Senator. Can it get any more ridiculous or condescending?

Tactic – There was a round of incumbent campaign opportunities around the state that were hosted by the GOP. They were wide and varied in their orchestration and support for the incumbent.

WHEN PARTY DISCIPLINES RULE

Impact – A party boss approach for overwhelming the South Carolina electorate about the “rock star” status of the incumbent and who they have already chosen as the primary nominee.

Tactic – Allowing the incumbent’s team to set up tables at GOP meetings while refusing the same courtesies to opposition candidates. Is this neutral or impartial?

Impact – This allows the incumbent to continue to get all of the exposure he/she wants while excluding the opposition candidates from having access to the same opportunities.

Tactic – Letters going out from GOP leadership that asks donors to support the incumbent’s reelection bid.

Impact – This is more evidence that we have an “illegitimate” primary process.

Tactic – Some GOP Party Chairs refusing to respond to our campaign’s Communications Director or my request to speak.

Impact – I guess that they think that we will just go away and their silence will limit our voices.

Tactic – Through direct email and Facebook correspondence (posts) some GOP leaders have pledged their allegiance to the incumbent and attacked me.

Impact – It is depriving the SC electorate of hearing from all of the candidates. The process is a manipulated predetermined scam for some participating leaders.

After almost five months on the campaign trail, while crisscrossing the beautiful state of South Carolina, I have concluded that some in GOP leadership don’t want to have fair and impartial primary races. GOP

leadership was able to shut down the Presidential Primary and current actions by some are “effectively” doing the same thing with the Senate race. Because of the laws on the books for the Senate primary, they were forced to hold one. However, by all appearances and conversations that I have had, some in-party leadership (not all) were working overtime to manipulate the outcome and give the incumbent the victory. I say once again...we are better than this. Party leadership should be preaching and demonstrating fairness and neutrality, not manipulation and control!

I harbor no hatred, resentment, or animosity toward any of my fellow Republicans. It was an honor of a lifetime to campaign for the position of U.S. Senator. I am simply expressing my opinion that some (not all) have compromised their position of leadership. I am focused on rebuilding a primary process that is fair, neutral, and impartial. There is a direct conflict of interest with some (not all) GOP leaders in our state. We simply need to agree to have an open and honest discussion (with guidance from our state leaders) on what a “model” approach might look like in the future.

All I am suggesting is that we talk about a “best practice” approach for allowing candidates to tell their individual stories within party ranks. It’s just that simple. It’s not complex. It is just a fair and balanced approach to selecting the best possible House and Senate candidates from South Carolina. I mean the best possible candidates from the perspective of “We the People” and not party leaders who try and pick winners and losers.

Speaking Truth to Power

The preservation of the sacred fire of liberty, and the destiny of the Republican model of Government, are justly considered as deeply, perhaps as finally staked, on the experiment entrusted to the hands of the American people.

-George Washington

I want to brag on a GOP County Chairperson and an Executive Committeeperson in Berkeley County that have created the ideal model of what it means to be fair, neutral, and impartial during a Republican Party primary race. When I attended their monthly breakfast meetings I was always delighted and impressed with the professionalism of the event and its overall orchestration.

First, you are greeted with a warm hand at the door that welcomes you no matter who you are, what office that you may be running for, or the positions that you may take on the various policy issues of the day. They treat you like you are part of the Republican Party family. Second, they allow elected officials and candidates to introduce themselves and say a few brief words about what they have going on in their respective worlds. They allow this without reservation or judgment. These leaders also work very hard at remaining neutral and impartial by giving opposing voices within our party equal time. For example, they host political forums that allow primary candidates for the U.S. House and the U.S. Senate an opportunity to showcase their talents and knowledge in front of other county Republicans.

They do this because they understand the magnitude of the office under consideration, the importance of allowing citizens of our great state to be informed when casting their votes, and how hard the candidates work (the demanding nature of a campaign) to represent our state. One would never know which candidates these GOP County leaders support because they are unbiased in their approach. Their primary concern is to teach, educate, inspire, and inform. Hats off to these true leaders who have the depth of understanding of how to grow and inspire our party to depths unknown.

There are other Republican Party leaders in SC that take a little different twist that is equally effective. In addition to making everyone feel welcome, they give opposing voices at the monthly meetings 15-20 minutes to “peddle their wares” and then take any questions at the end. This too is greatly appreciated by those running in primary races. These GOP leaders understand the importance of letting the citizens of SC hear from all the candidates which helps them to make informed voting decisions. These leaders are careful to spell out and vocalize their role as neutral and impartial.

In my mind, this is great training for our Republican Party members and demonstrates fairness and good internal politics. In recent days I have had some GOP leaders contact me for speaking opportunities with one of the two options above. I sincerely appreciate the opportunity.

It is my opinion that there are leaders that take an approach that alienates those running in primary races. Some show great favoritism toward the incumbent or vocalize their support of one candidate over another. Additionally, internal GOP decisions are made at the monthly meetings that clearly show partiality toward a specific candidate. For example, they put off giving opposing voices any time to speak within GOP ranks until after the March filing period. This tactic has the effect of limiting a primary candidate’s window to campaign within his/her party to 10-12 weeks or so. As a former global strategist and leader at a \$65 Billion company, I can say without reservation that this has the “effect” of stifling the opposition voices of those running against an incumbent. In my case, since I was running for the U.S. Senate seat against a very powerful 3-term incumbent, it limited my time to run against a sitting U.S. Senator (and showcase my talents) to a

paltry 10-12 weeks or so. Think about this. I am running for one of the most prestigious elected offices in all the land and these managers only give me a limited amount of time within my own party.

I believe that these specific “managers” took an approach that had “effectively” shut down the Republican Party primary in 2020 and has made the whole process illegitimate. Whether this tactic was purposeful or without intent, their decision-making actions are hurting our party. They are robbing our citizenry of a fair and neutral process. In other words, these specific party leaders have “circled the wagons” around the incumbent. In another show of their prejudicial conduct, they allowed the incumbent to have a reserved table to display all of their campaign materials. Who is kidding who? The fix was in at these locations. This gave an outright appearance to GOP county members that we have a “rigged” Republican Party primary process and this is who you should vote for.

It wasn't always this way. In the previous senatorial election cycle, I am being told by those who ran against the incumbent that they had almost full access to the local party meetings. What I want to know is, who is the genius that decided to create internal GOP member angst within the Republican Party family? These GOP leaders are serving themselves, their preferential candidates, and not serving the best interests of the South Carolina Republican electorate.

I am asking the SC GOP leadership to have a deeper discussion on the above matters. While I agree that the way this matter is handled should be up to the local county chapters, I also believe that the GOP state leadership should provide some additional guidance on this issue. At the very least, there should be an open discussion about neutrality and impartiality during a primary race. If this doesn't happen, why is this any different from the old party bosses picking the winners and losers and shutting down opposition voices?

Let me recap the facts:

- I ran for one of the most influential elected offices in all the land

- I was told by many GOP leaders that I couldn't speak at monthly GOP meetings until after the filing period
- Campaign literature, rallies, campaign launches, and printed materials for donations supporting the incumbent were allowed by GOP leadership
- I was told by one GOP leader that because of my eagerness to expose what I believe to be an inequity in the primary process that I would be excluded entirely from the process of speaking (another example of a "manager" not willing to listen to an opposition voice suggesting improvement)-and I was excluded.

In summary, I have been a life-long conservative Republican that cast his first ballot for Ronald Reagan. I see a primary process that is flawed and in need of improvement. I will continue talking about this flaw (on radio, national television, the press, and social media) until an honest discussion takes place. Suppressing the opposition voices are tactics that a banana republic or a communist dictatorship would sponsor. This is America, not Venezuela, Cuba, or Nicaragua. Unfortunately, this is also happening on a national level. The democrat party invokes fearmongering and creates narratives that do not exist to procure a certain outcome. South Carolina Republican leadership-we are better than this!

Fairness & Freedom

Political freedom includes in it every other blessing. All the pleasures of riches, science, virtue, and even religion itself derive their value from liberty alone. No wonder therefore wise and prudent legislators have in all ages been held in such great veneration; and no wonder too those illustrious souls who have employed their pens and sacrificed their lives in defense of liberty have met with such universal applause. Their reputations, like some majestic river which enlarges and widens as it approaches its parent ocean, shall become greater and greater through every age and outlive the ruins of the world itself. -Benjamin Rush

One of the pillars of the American “way of life” is fair competition. It is essential to the freedom and liberty that we currently enjoy as citizens of the United States of America. The pillar of fair competition can be seen in every aspect of American existence. I divide life’s commitments into what I call “sandboxes.” These are areas in which we work and play, a compartmentalization of sorts. All of the sandboxes of life are enveloped with the intent and determination of having a fair and equal fight. We even saw this concept play out when our Founding Fathers constructed the First Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. In our Bill of Rights, our Founders wanted to make sure that individual citizens were treated with the utmost degree of fairness. Later on, when we saw the gross inequities taking place toward African Americans and women, we made the long-sought-after

course-corrections toward a fairer society. We continually work towards fairness and freedom.

In the business world, we see the element of fair competition playing out when monopolist advantages are stopped dead in their tracks. In the legal realm, we are afforded due process that assures an element of fairness. In sports, we have umpires and referees to make sure that everyone is playing by the rules and there is fair competition. In general, Americans get very upset when they see someone taking advantage of, or manipulating, a process to get an unfair advantage. It just doesn't sit well with us Americans!

It is my opinion that we are seeing the elements of an unfair primary process in the Senate race in South Carolina. I believe that the integrity of the GOP primary has been breached. The rules of the game have been changed since the last election cycle and are now being manipulated to allow incumbents and preferred members of the GOP to gain an unfair advantage.

Many of those involved have devised new rules that shut out opposing candidates and their voices. The "spin" that surrounds their reasoning sounds like something taken directly from the democrat party's playbook. Change the rules, limit opposition voices, then criticize and attack anyone who would dare mess with their predetermined outcome.

At the end of the day, our existence as Americans is wrapped up with this notion of fair competition. Just like law and order, without fair competition, America can never have liberty and freedom. Our Founding Fathers understood this and rationalized their views in the Federalist Papers. Our entire Constitution is designed around tamping down the excesses of power, greed, and control. They understood the baser instincts of mankind and their bent toward manipulating the various forms of governance. I believe as conservatives we can do better. As Republicans, we can do better. Our leadership needs to ensure this fairness and freedom permeates our primary process and all political processes in South Carolina.

An Unconverted Political Leadership Class

The price of freedom is eternal vigilance.
-Thomas Jefferson

Let's talk about the dangers of a disingenuous Republican political leadership class in South Carolina. I believe that the cause of this, by some (not all), is an unregenerate Republican leadership class in South Carolina relating to the adherence to the fundamentals of true political conservatism. True Bible-belt conservatism is waning in South Carolina to our detriment.

As I traveled around the beautiful state of South Carolina campaigning for "The New Frontier of Christian Conservatism" (this was our campaign slogan based on a focus that takes us back to the principles of God's Word and one that helps rebuild the moral and spiritual foundations of our great state and country), I am overwhelmed with the opinion that there are three separate and distinct Republican political classes at work in our state. First, there is the leadership class who I consider to be part of the existing Republican establishment and those who have gained access to elected leaders in South Carolina. This appears to be those that have been sucked into the vortex of social progressivism at some level.

Several questions must be asked of this first Republican political leadership

class in South Carolina that I deem to be fair and appropriate. Has comfort with the familiar overshadowed the clarity of true conservative values? Does all of the current leadership consistently support policies that are conservative or do they vote for progressive liberal initiatives on a regular basis? Have the delicacies of political ideology and comfort crowded out foundational Christian values and truth? Does the existing Republican political class have the courage to stand up and say “enough is enough?” Do they have the care necessary to reengage in Ronald Reagan like conservatism? Research has established that the party regular is attached to politics by social as well as ideological incentives (and also by material incentives) and that such attachment encourages the virtues of the good team member: cooperation, perseverance, loyalty, service, and the will to win.¹¹

The reasons for the above questions are varied. I have spent much time recently listening to a select group of establishment Republicans all across our state, defending our current political ideologies. I have noticed that many of these establishment Republicans in positions of leadership work very hard at rationalizing, legitimizing, and ultimately justifying progressive liberal comments, voting records, and positions on issues that are way out of touch with Bible-belt South Carolina. It is my opinion that they have become enamored with the celebrity status of knowing the right people and having access to power.

The linguistic gymnastics of rationalization, legitimization, and justification seem to know no boundaries or no ends by way of comments made and positions taken by the GOP establishment.

At the end of the day, this Republican political leadership class has to go inside the voting booth and cast a ballot for the candidate that they feel best reflects their moral values, political beliefs, and ideals. I am simply asking this first group of leaders to perform a “gut check”, stop rationalizing progressive liberal positions on social issues, and then (and only then) cast a vote for the

¹¹ Jeane Kirkpatrick, *Dictatorships and Double Standards (Rationalism & Reason in Politics)*, Copyright © by American Enterprise Institute, (New York, New York: Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1983).

person that best reflects your political beliefs and/or moral values.

The second Republican political class at work in South Carolina are those who are anti-establishment and want to continue to drain the swamp and desire to see a change in the U.S. Senate seat. They feel that many in leadership do not reflect their conservative political ideals based on the incumbents voting records. They simply “tell it like it is” based on the facts. To be honest, this is a refreshing and logic-based approach to analyzing the candidates and making informed decisions on how to vote. Fortunately, this Republican political class makes up a fairly large size of the voting bloc in South Carolina and is activist in nature. Because they are activists, they can get down into the weeds on the issues- I love this group! There is no “group think” with this class at all. They are not conservative clones or automatons. This is a key anti-establishment voting bloc that makes up 35-40 percent of the overall vote.

The third Republican political class is those who have never before been or considered themselves to be a political class. They are a key voting bloc in every election. These are the folks that have sat on the sidelines for a very long time but now feel compelled to get involved and vote. They have been moved and prompted by God’s leading (knowingly or unknowingly) to stand up and get involved. In many respects, this group of voters could tip the scales and balance of power to unseat the quasi-Republican leadership across America. High voter turnout from this political class in the primary will mean retirement for many incumbents.

I believe that quasi-Republicans are attacking the foundations of the traditional social order of South Carolina with their progressive liberal ideology. This needs to stop! I am coming to the defense of South Carolinians. Please pray for our state and the return to traditional (Christian) social values and beliefs.

The Republican Party Platform vs. Quasi-Republicans

A strong argument could be made that based on the voting record and policy positions of some quasi- Republicans (Q.R.), they are more in line with the progressive left than with conservative Republican ideology on specific issues! Regardless of how one slices and rationalizes the below facts, at a minimum, one must conclude that they do not support vital portions of the Republican Party platform. Let's take a closer look at the SC Republican Party platform and how these quasi-Republicans (Q.R.) line up against a myriad of GOP policies.

SC GOP - We believe the United States Supreme Court should return to its historic role of interpreting and applying the Constitution as understood and intended by its Framers.

Q.R.– Some quasi-Republicans voted to confirm arguably two of the most progressive liberal Supreme Court Justices in the history of our country. Their judicial decisions are based on an “elastic” and “living” view of the Constitution which is unconstitutional at the core.

SC GOP - We recognize that privatization is an important alternative to higher taxes and reduced government services.

Q.R. – Many quasi-Republicans want to impose a tax on our carbon footprint

(Cap and Trade). The idea of a “market-based system” for global warming has been proposed.

SC GOP - This Party anchors itself to the immovable rock of traditional values and moral absolutes, rejecting political correctness and moral relativism. We believe in the traditional definition of marriage as between one man and one woman.

Q.R. – In an effort to “reach across the aisle” and be “relevant” some quasi-Republicans suggest support of LGBTQ+ rights.

SC GOP - We believe property rights should never be violated by the misuse or overuse of government regulations. We believe in the individual, constitutionally-protected right of the people to keep and bear arms for security and defense of self, family, others, property, or the state, as well as for other lawful purposes.

Q.R. – Some quasi-Republicans are calling for “Red Flag” legislation that will infringe our 2nd, 4th, 5th, and 14th amendment rights. This infringes our right to keep and bear arms, due process, and our property rights under the Constitution of the United States of America. Gun rights are fundamental to American citizenship.

SC GOP – We believe Roe v. Wade should be reversed through judicial action or the passage of a Constitutional Human Life Amendment.

Q.R. – Some quasi-Republicans think that Roe v. Wade shouldn't be overturned “unless there is some good reason.” They believe that you can be conservative and pro-life and also believe in legal precedence. In other words, they are telling us that the laws of humanity should overshadow the moral law of God.

SC GOP - We support a military force of sufficient strength and readiness to

deter any threat to our national sovereignty or the safety and freedom of our citizens. We support the constitutional mandate to protect and secure our national borders.

Q.R. – Some quasi-Republicans supported legislation that would allow over 11 million illegal aliens a pathway to citizenship. This decision would have bloated the costs of entitlement programs, increased classroom sizes, allowed many criminals on our shores (drug lords, human and child traffickers, terrorists), help change the political balance of power in the United States while telling the world that we are open for business. In other words, if you break the law you win the lottery and are awarded citizenship.

There is a coming event that will be the true test of whether these quasi-Republicans believe in the true and faithful ideals of the Republican Party platform or if they are more interested in holding political power.

Understanding Political Viability

I know no safe depository of the ultimate powers of society but the people themselves; and if we think them not enlightened enough to exercise their control with a wholesome discretion, the remedy is not to take it from them, but to inform their discretion by education.
-Thomas Jefferson

I want to tackle the subject of political viability. I quite frequently encountered the “party boss” mentality by some GOP County leadership during my campaign around South Carolina. Political viability is a subject that has been thrown around like a cheap suit in the Republican Party leadership ranks. The “noise’ that I heard goes something like this:

- If you do not have a predetermined amount of campaign money (everyone has a different opinion on the amount), or cash on hand, you are not viable
- If you do not have name recognition in the party, you are not viable
- If you do not have a record of “applying capital” (have been a serial dispenser of cash) in South Carolina, you are not viable

However, when I looked up the qualifications for running for the position of U.S. Senate on the Senate.gov website, only three primary considerations were discussed relating to qualifications and terms of service.

1. The Constitution sets three qualifications for service in the U.S. Senate: age (at least thirty years of age); U.S. citizenship (at least nine years); and residency in the state a senator represents at the time of election. The details of these qualifications were hammered out by the Constitution's framers during the Constitutional Convention in 1787.
2. Article I, section 3 of the Constitution requires the Senate to be divided into three classes for purposes of elections. Senators are elected to six-year terms, and every two years the members of one class—approximately one-third of the senators—face election or reelection.
3. The Constitution does not provide an oath of office for members of Congress, but specifies only that they “shall be bound by Oath of Affirmation to support this constitution.” The oath of office that one-third of the Senate recites every two years is a product of the 1860s, drafted by Civil War-era members intent on ensnaring traitors. The oath-taking, however, dates back to the First Congress in 1789. The first oath served the Senate for nearly three-quarters of a century. The current oath, in use since 1884, is a milder version of the oath adopted in 1862.

Where does it say in the Constitution that a candidate is not viable until he has a lot of money or cash on hand? It is nowhere in the Constitution. Many GOP leaders try to determine who they think are the politically viable candidates and when/if they should allow these candidates to speak at the monthly meetings. In other words, the GOP leaders (party bosses) pick the winners and losers for their respective counties. They decide which opposition voices (to the incumbent) get to speak to the citizens of South Carolina. They get to decide if the qualifications, background, integrity, and “political viability” of those registered with the Federal Election Commission fit their personal views of viability. They get to delay the opposition voices as long as they can to thwart their chances of gaining any momentum within party ranks. Believe it or not, this is happening in the United States of America, where freedom of choice is supposed to reign supreme. We do not live under a dictatorship,

UNDERSTANDING POLITICAL VIABILITY

a monarchy, or an oligarchy. We live in a Constitutional Republic, where the people get to choose who they think is fit for the position, not a ruling class elite.

A Problem-Solving Businessman

What is government itself but the greatest of all reflections on human nature? If men were angels, no government would be necessary. If angels were to govern men, neither external nor internal controls on government would be necessary. -James Madison

Who am I? Many have not heard of me before my run for the U.S. Senate seat from South Carolina. I am a successful problem-solving businessman and entrepreneur who is leading the charge to help rebuild the moral and spiritual foundations of our great state. I have been leading this charge through the political arena and beyond for decades. Without our anchor driven deep in the fertile ground of God's Holy Word, we will never retake the moral and spiritual high ground that our Founding Fathers envisioned.

In our state and federal government today, there are professional political operatives that are part of the entrenched Republican establishment. Our great President, Donald Trump, is doing his best to drain the entrenched establishment swamp. There are many in that swamp and I believe that we should all realize this fact and point our party to a more conservative path. We must recognize that there are members of our own party who seek to sway our country from its founding principles. Many in our party fail to understand that the Republican Party needs reform. The first step in repositioning and aligning our political ideology is to contemplate where we are now. We are

no longer on the straight and narrow conservative Republican path.

As a former Global Strategist at a \$65 billion company and founder of a Christian leadership ministry, I have both the common-sense problem-solving ability and depth of spiritual insight to lead South Carolinians. I do not say this from a moral high horse or think myself superior to others. On the contrary, I am simply an average citizen trying to make a difference in the political arena. I decided to stop complaining and get involved and do something! I believe our culture has become disillusioned from do-gooders who claim to have the best interest of others at heart and then take policy positions, cast votes, and exhibit other forms of decision-making behavior that conflict with the Republican Party platform. In reality, many of them have become corrupt and are part of the political swamp. As a result, many in our country have an aversion to newcomers who claim to be moral and ready to “take on” Washington. In our disillusionment, we can never lose sight of our founding principles and how we started as a nation. We had men who held themselves accountable (along with the necessary action) for the love and passion they had for their country. Because they loved their nation and equipped themselves intellectually and spiritually to handle the grandiosity of leadership, they were able to tackle Leviathans of greed and power that came their way.

We came from men who pledged their lives, their duty, and their sacred honor to lead our country to the position of the most powerful and developed nation in the world. If we are to maintain leadership and influence in this way, we must be willing to assert ourselves as moral leaders and take the mantle and responsibility of public service. Those who have a passion to see America flourish should fully engage. The offices of representatives and senators should be held in high regard and respected for the positions they are, not belittled and chastised. Many politicians in our country have also come to apologize for who we are as a country. I want to see our state as successful and enjoyable to live in as it can be for its citizens. I unapologetically seek to do that in whatever capacity I am needed. However, true conservatism will follow me everywhere I go. God bless our Founding Fathers and the original intent of the Constitution (along with the Bill of Rights) they created

for posterity!

The Politicization of Mass Shootings

Those that can give up essential liberty to gain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety. -Benjamin Franklin

In the days following three horrific mass shootings, I want to be careful and considerate of how I discuss the topic of gun rights and how the liberal left politicizes these tragedies. It would do no good for me to stoop to their level and push a political agenda while so many are grieving the loss of innocent lives. I would be remiss, however, if I did not point out the harm done to our nation as the left continues to use these tragedies to push for restrictive gun laws. Therefore, I tread lightly as I move forward with the topic but want you to feel the weight of its implications.

Each time there is a violent gun offense in the United States of America, the progressive left starts calling for stricter gun laws. They believe that the mere ownership of guns causes citizens to plan and carry out these horrendous and heinous crimes. They point to the access of guns, free speech mediums, and right-leaning ideologies as the source of violence. They either fail or refuse to look at the greater root causes of these horrific crimes.

The truth is, guns don't pre-meditate dastardly initiatives for destruction, horror, and pain- people do. If one weapon was taken from them, they would simply choose another. People who are devoid of law-abiding motives, with disregard for humanity, will stop at nothing to do harm. It is not the ownership of guns that causes the crime, it is the criminals who use weapons

for the destruction of life. Restricting the rights of many to attempt to curb the violence of the few, is never a solution.

My greatest concern with these proposed laws (Red Flag laws) is the impact they will have on law-abiding citizens. Gun restriction measures could do much harm to the majority of our citizens; inhibit their ability to exercise their free rights; while limiting their ability to defend themselves. These proposed laws have loopholes and liberties that allow anyone to accuse anyone of mal intent. This takes away the liberties and freedom of law-abiding Americans with the swoop of a pen. This legislation must never be allowed to materialize.

The Decline of Family Values in Our Society

Society's downplay of the importance of fatherhood and strong marriages is an epidemic. The pressures of society placed on young people through peer pressure and constantly keeping up with celebrities and influencers is mind-boggling. Is there any wonder why so many young people have depressive thoughts and insecurities? Where have the parents, teachers, pastors, and leaders gone that are integral players in the young person's positive development?

Why are kids allowed to consume hours of mindless media and targeted advertisements? This does nothing but strip their moral core and teach them lessons of tolerance and acceptance of abnormal lifestyles. Their consciences are being beaten and seared by media and society. Both are indoctrinating them to believe that they are horrible people if they don't accept grotesque forms of sexual preferences, acceptance of the breakdown of family units, reversed gender roles, and the stripping of their masculinity. Our society will devolve and take the family unit down with it unless we do something about it.

There is a concentrated attack against young people over the place of God and family in our society. These attacks are being spoon-fed to them through pop culture and media in movies, music, and social media. Conservative values have left the schools and are being driven out of almost every other area of society. How can we expect people to grasp moral absolutes of right and wrong while being told everything is relative? How can we condemn the

real-life and horrific murders and sex crimes, if it is being glorified in movies, music, and the media? The plain truth is that the progressive left and those who want to take our guns feel that managing the symptoms of the violence is more important than attacking the root cause. They are unwilling to admit that the primary solution lies at the root of mitigating gun violence and not in managing the horrendous results. We must strengthen the family unit in America.

The inaction of Law Enforcement on Past Threats

In many cases of mass shootings, the gunman is not without a prior history of violent rhetoric, minor assaults, and written plots that the police are already aware of. In many instances, family, friends, fellow students, and others have contacted local law enforcement to report feeling threatened, long before the suspect follows through with their violent fantasies. In many of those cases, informants feel they weren't taken seriously by the police.

The question becomes if threats are not taken seriously before a tragedy occurs, what good would it do to give these same law enforcement officials the power to confiscate our firearms? Would removing firearms existentially remove the threat of the violent person? Would the troubled person just abandon all ideas of murder simply because he or she has been denied one form of weapon? Not likely.

However, many hospitals do have a psychiatric ward to assist when real concerns arise. Perhaps it would make more sense to follow our current laws and put them in the hospital while they are contemplating violence?

Guns are not the problem and gun laws are not the solution

According to the Crime Prevention Research Center, 97.8 percent of public shootings occur in "gun-free zones." Think about that for a moment. Those who are unarmed to protect themselves are the ones being targeted by the violent assailants. In many cases, the guns of the assailants are obtained illegally. So, it is not true to say that if guns were harder to obtain that crime would be reduced. The correlation isn't that simple. Consider this quote: "Ignoring what's going on in the heads of these psychopaths, not only allows

mass shootings to continue, it leads to misguided gun control laws that violate the Second Amendment, and negate the rights of law-abiding U.S. citizens.” As Jeff Snyder put it in *The Washington Times*:

“But to ban guns because criminals use them is to tell the innocent and law-abiding that their rights and liberties depend not on their own conduct, but on the conduct of the guilty and the lawless. It sends an additional message that the law will permit them to only have rights and liberties that the lawless will allow.”

The right to own guns is characteristic of what it means to be an American since the founding of our great nation. These rights should not be limited or stripped away from us because of the actions of the few who choose unlawful behavior and use these weapons for evil. The keeping and bearing of arms as prescribed by the Constitution is for the protection of the people from government tyranny while maintaining safeguard over the rights of our lives, land, and families.

Our nation must return to its founding principles and young people must be taught the dangers of misusing guns and weapons. Proper weapon training is paramount for young people to understand how a gun is handled. Weapons should be kept out of reach of young children, who are not yet old enough to be trained on proper use. We must also make sure that guns stop being glorified as the problem. Our society must return to principles of family units being strengthened through family involvement, principled teaching, and respect for the life and well-being of one another.

The Anarchist Next Door

Freedom and not servitude is the cure of anarchy; as religion, and not atheism, is the true remedy for superstition. -Edmund Burke

Previously I have written about the perils of a statist ideology. We explored how big government incrementally seizes and takes control of every aspect of our lives. In this chapter we are going to look at the specific tactics being used by the progressive leftist crowd (democrat socialists), so they can speed up the process of gaining and keeping power to propel their socialist agenda. Much of what you will see below is nonsensical, outlandish, and fraught with objectives that undermine constitutional authority and law and order. Yes, your next-door neighbor may be knowingly or unknowingly supporting an ideology of hate, confusion, and anarchy!

1. Abolish the Electoral College – Our Founding Fathers were smart enough to know that letting the majority rule (mob rule) would do great harm to the nation-building process. Because of their depth of understanding, they established a system of representative government (through electors) that normalized the impact of votes from our urban, suburban, and rural constituents.

2. More Supreme Court Justices – The democrat socialists want to tilt the balance of power in the Supreme Court. They want to do this by

increasing the number of Justices on the Supreme Court to nullify the gains that conservatives have made on the bench in recent years. Their idea is to stack the deck with a few more left-leaning Supreme Court Justices! Yes, Sotomayor and Kagan all over again!

3. Lower the Voting Age – There has been much silly talk of giving 16-year-old children the right to vote. This is another blatant attempt to garner a large voting block with those that have documented sensitivities toward utopian ideals (socialist candy store and free stuff) without any real understanding of world history.

4. Allow Washington DC Congressional Representation – This is another farfetched consideration on the left is to give Washington, DC, statehood status. Yes, allow this bastion of progressivism (District of Columbia) to establish a state government with Congressional representation that bleeds blue.

5. Open Borders Immigration Policy – I can only imagine what this would do to the structural components and underpinnings of our great country. In my book, not having borders means the slow and agonizing death of a nation.

6. Give Puerto Rico Statehood – Another attempt to bring left-leaning citizens from an unincorporated territory to influence the balance of power. We need to keep this a U.S. territory in the foreseeable future.

7. Welfare and Nanny State – The democrat socialists in our country want to continue the out-of-control spending and balloon our government to catastrophic proportions! They also want a highly regulated society to control citizen behavior. We need a Convention of States to address the need for a balanced budget.

8. Common Core – The progressive left works simultaneously at brainwashing and whitewashing components of their ideology through education. They get to the kids early with their doctrine, whitewash history (at least the parts

they don't like), and indoctrinate them with their secular humanist ideology.

Make no mistake, manipulating the balance of power, creating dependency, indoctrinating our youth, and plowing forward toward a totalitarian style of government is their end game. The real surprise in the 2020 election cycle is that they "came out" and told the world the truth about their ultimate intent... socialism...an astoundingly clear message of the redistribution of corporate and personal wealth.

Common Ground Not Compromise

Among the latter, under pretense of governing, they have divided their nations into two classes, wolves and sheep. -Thomas Jefferson

The art of conservative politics is the ability to build relationships, identify leverage, and build a framework to find key legislative initiatives for consensus and common ground. The opposite of this approach leads politicians (professional political operatives) to compromise their core personal values and beliefs for the sake of making a deal. Unfortunately, in many respects (not all), the political world that we operate in is a space that is void of morality, common human decency, and standards of excellence that can only be derived from our Creator. As a result of this void, we see well-intentioned Senators and House members experiencing the fallout and poison of political drift. The political drift I am talking about happens as a result of institutional norms (the administrative deep state) that generate behavior and expectations misaligned with moral and biblical standards. In other words, our elected officials lose sight of why they were elected to their respective positions in the first place. They start drifting from their previously held core values and lose sight of their citizens back home.

There are many good men and women who go to Washington with the zeal and energy to conquer the world! However, over time they become morally

callous and conditioned to worldly ideas and secular decision-making. They leave the idealism of their true conservative positions and values for the greener pastures of compromise and self-adulation. They get sucked into the whirlwind of self-promotion and legacy-building distractions instead of using their platforms to lead us to higher ground.

As conservative Republicans, we must never let down our guard, even for a second. The American people and the citizens of South Carolina are counting on us to do the right thing. We must stop the corruption and influence-peddling that is so prevalent in our culture. For this to happen, we need to usher in a new breed of elected officials who are willing to stand tall, endure criticism, never compromise, and make this country a better place. This new breed of officials must be committed to personal responsibility and integrity. Second, we also need to change some of the structural dynamics and underpinnings of our great government and system of laws with three primary reforms.

These reforms will create the momentum to stir a nation united while removing the institutional barriers for liberty and freedom.

- Campaign Finance Reform
- Flat Tax Implementation
- Term Limit Amendment

I believe that these three changes alone will help dramatically stop the flow of dirty money while resurrecting the value of ideas, policy positions, and integrity. These reforms will also help to end the onslaught of applying capital and capital distribution while reducing the overall impact of lobbyists. As citizens and voters of a free constitutional republic, it is within our power to change the course of history. Seeking common ground and not compromise is the secret sauce of success.

Section IV

AMERICA

THE BEAUTIFUL

AMERICA: THE BEAUTIFUL – Section IV

You may have noticed by now that one of the primary undertones of this book is to recommission our thinking back to the days of yesteryear. You may have also noticed how deeply committed Team LaPierre was/is to move our country forward toward a more educated, informed, and activist orientation. This section of the book carefully lays out the plans on how to get there.

We painstakingly relate the formula and details that are needed to take our country back. If I could be so bold, I would like to illustrate what we are trying to accomplish in this section by comparing the secular humanist tactics, strategy, and nefarious methods used in general, against those with a faith-based and moralist perception of reality and the traditional methods used.

Those with a secular worldview and appreciation show much affinity to several well-known documents. The Secular Humanist Manifestos I, II, III, along with the Communist Manifesto each support an anti-God position that we believe will do great harm to our country. The first is a document that undergirds the tenants and doctrine of a religious organization, while the second supports the dogmas and philosophy of a political ideology and strategy. However, please make sure that you don't miss the intersection and commonality of each. They both want to radically transform our country away from capitalism, our Constitution, freedom of religion, and other conservative/moral principles that have governed our nation for centuries.

Quite frankly, and for the most part, they hate our country and all that it stands for.

What we have done is answered both of their EVIL summations (we are reluctant to call them real manuscripts) with a response of our own. We have created the vital manuscripts and reasoning necessary that attack the secular humanist and socialist way of thinking with a “full frontal” assault. This section is also a centerpiece for our response to the utter nonsensical way of governing, espoused by the progressive left. In the “America the Beautiful” section, we hope you will find the antithesis of secular reasoning and propaganda.

We believe that you will find a plan, by which, Americans can unify around and stop the incremental erosion of the pillars of our GREAT country. America is truly beautiful. I hope that you will pray that her beauty will continue down through the ages.

Morality & Religious Sentiment

Lastly, our ancestors established their system of government on morality and religious sentiment. Moral habits, they believed, cannot safely be trusted on any other foundation than religious principle, nor any government be secure which is not supported by moral habits ... Whatever makes men good Christians, makes them good citizens. -Daniel Webster

If I could be so bold as to add to Christian Statesman Daniel Webster's comments, "It also makes them good public servants and leaders." In this discourse, we are going to look at what the Bible has to say about our civic responsibility and how we relate to others as Christian men and women in the public arena. What conclusions can we draw from the Word of God that will give us the appropriate direction and guidance that we need as imperfect human beings serving a holy and righteous God?

As we draw those conclusions, I am going to make some broad observations and interpretations about leadership and our culture in America. These are not designed to cast dispersion or shed a negative light on any one individual. These conclusions are aimed at encouraging and challenging all Christian leaders in the church body across America. By the leading of the Holy Spirit, I am trying to help us think beyond a theoretical understanding of our responsibilities in the political arena and stir us up toward our activism in the same.

Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance. (2 Peter 1:13)

This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance. (2 Peter 3:1)

I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not. (Jude 1:5)

The Bible extends enormous responsibility in the sandbox of public policy, governance, and the corresponding decision-making in each. At certain times, as much as we would like to run and hide from the decisions in the public arena, God tells Christians to lead. The Bible tells us much more than to simply identify with Christianity in politics. We must live Christianity out loud and with the passion and vigor necessary to proclaim Christ and impact the culture. He also reminds us that He is in control. Jesus Christ reigns supreme, and we should always take shelter in the shadow of His wings.¹²

¹² A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Acknowledging Supremacy

Dear Lord, help me to be a faithful husbandman and citizen in the temporal assignment of ambassador that you have given me for your glory.

The Supremacy of the “Great I Am,” His mercy, and the refuge that He provides are on full display in the following verses:

For the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof. (1 Corinthians 10:26)

When you read this verse, is there any doubt about who is in control?

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure, they are and were created. (Revelations 4:11)

We serve at the Lord’s pleasure.

Be merciful unto me, O God, be merciful unto me: for my soul trusteth in thee: yea, in the shadow of thy wings will I make my refuge, until these calamities be overpast. (Psalm 57:1)

To say that some of the decisions being made in the public arena are calamities would be a gross understatement. We know beyond a shadow of a doubt that God is sovereign and reigns supreme over every spiritual and physical realm, which includes ministry, family, vocation, education, arts and entertainment, athletics, and, yes, even our governance.

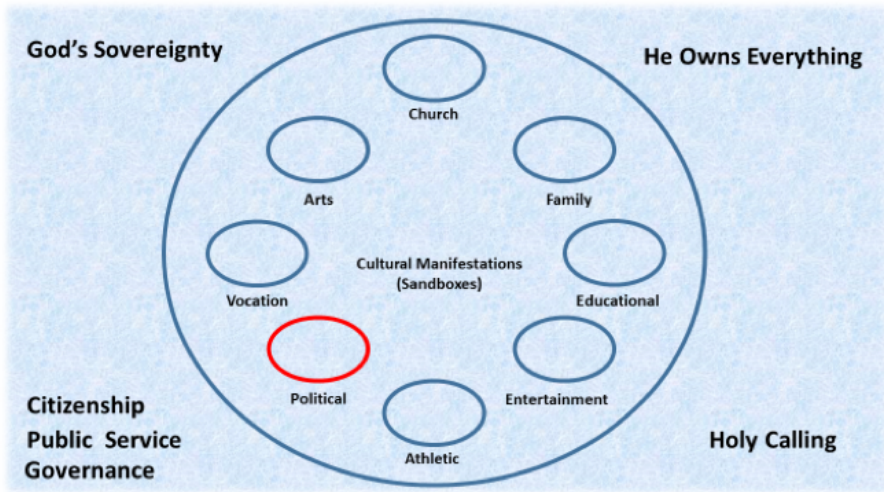


Illustration 1.1

This illustration shows us that God owns all of the spiritual sandboxes in which we live. He uses each of these for His will- to prepare Christians spiritually, to give glory to His name, and to help believers learn how to love their neighbors. Are Christians today impacting each of these primary spiritual sandboxes? Is God the primary focus in each? If not, why not?

Two more questions must be asked: 1. Why have we ceded control of our politics to secular humanism? 2. How and why has the enemy made so many inroads into controlling this spiritual realm?

First, we are going to look at specific scriptural references that help us understand our civic responsibility.

Second, we will explore the cultural conditions that exist in America to help

ACKNOWLEDGING SUPREMACY

explain our current plight. Finally, let us create a traditional and historical road map from the Bible and our Christian forefathers to pave an exciting new path ahead (well, really an old path that we are going to recommission for His glory). The verses in the next few chapters will give us both direct and indirect application and the necessary context while providing the springboard of understanding relating to our civic responsibilities in the 21st century.¹³

¹³ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Our Civic Responsibility

God, show us from your Word how you would organize our thinking on this issue.

God's Word and His moral law are the foundation of the covenant of civic responsibility. They should sanitize the sin and iniquity ingrained in our current political system. His Word and moral law should also help us see through and discern the baser instincts of power, pride, and self-preservation for those seeking positions of leadership and higher authority. In other words, we should be very leery of anything or anyone that resembles lofty human thinking and pride. Every aspect of public life for Christians should be pointed skyward to glorify His name. Let's consider the following foundational verses that are key to the totality of our understanding of this issue:

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever, therefore, resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of

OUR CIVIC RESPONSIBILITY

God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath but also for conscience sake. For this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour. (Romans 13:1–7)

The Word of God tells Christians to submit themselves to those in governmental authority and honor them because they have been appointed and ordained by God for our good.

All the ends of the world shall remember and turn unto the LORD: and all the kindreds of the nations shall worship before thee. For the kingdom is the LORD's: and he is the governor among the nations. (Psalms 22:27–28)

God is ultimately our supreme ruler, sovereign, and governor over our political system.

By me kings reign, and princes decree justice. (Proverbs 8:15)

He directs and controls every minute detail of governance and justice here on Earth.

The king's heart is in the hand of the LORD, as the rivers of water: he turneth it whithersoever he will. (Proverbs 21:1)

This verse is further proof of the omniscient, omnipresent, and omnipotent character of God, who actively controls earthly matters of governance.

When thou sittest to eat with a ruler, consider diligently what is before thee: And put a knife to thy throat, if thou be a man given to appetite. (Proverbs 23:1–2)

Mankind ought to have a higher element of decency and decorum in the presence of a king ... it is called respect.

Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, "We ought to obey God rather than men". (Acts 5:29)

The hierarchy of allegiance and the corresponding obedience is clearly defined in the Bible.

Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. (Ephesians 5:16)

Christians have a responsibility to impact the culture in which they live with activist pursuits for the glory of God.

If thou seest the oppression of the poor, and violent perverting of judgment and justice in a province, marvel not at the matter: for he that is higher than the highest regardeth; and there be higher than they. (Ecclesiastes 5:8)

God sees all travesty of injustice in the world, including our political arena.

I counsel thee to keep the king's commandment, and that in regard of the oath of God. Be not hasty to go out of his sight: stand not in an evil thing; for he doeth whatsoever pleaseth him. Where the word of a king is, there is power: and who may say unto him, What doest thou? Whoso keepeth the commandment shall feel no evil thing: and a wise man's heart discerneth both time and judgment. (Ecclesiastes 8:2-5)

The Bible instructs us to submit to the higher powers of authority in our land.

Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law? They gather themselves together against the soul of the righteous and condemn the innocent blood. But the LORD is my

OUR CIVIC RESPONSIBILITY

defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge. And he shall bring upon them their own iniquity and shall cut them off in their own wickedness; yea, the LORD our God shall cut them off. (Psalm 94:20–23)

Wicked forms of government will not stand—a serious and disturbing thought when we search for the United States in the discussion of the end times in the book of Revelation.

Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God. Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king. (Peter 2:13–17)

We must submit ourselves to the laws of the land and those that govern over us as servants of God, regardless of their level of influence.

Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good word. To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men. (Titus 3:1–2)

When submitting to the powers of government, we are to do so with the grace and peace that exudes Christ Jesus.

And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor. And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly: Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no? But he perceived

their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar's. And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto God the things which be God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer and held their peace. (Luke 20:20–26)

Christ himself skillfully discerns the powers of governance from the powers on high along with their respective levels of authority.

And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers? Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee. (Matthew 17:24–27)

Christ modeled our responsibility to pay taxes and give to the government their requested portion. There are dozens and dozens of additional verses of Scripture that set the stage for both our understanding and the necessary execution of our civic responsibilities. For those who would like to do further research, the following verses provide additional support: Mark 12:13–17, Matthew 22:15–22, 1 Timothy 2:1–2, Daniel 2:20–21, Deuteronomy 16:18–20, Revelation 1:5–6, John 19:11, Mark 3:24, and Colossians 2:15.¹⁴

¹⁴ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Our Culture

Lord Jesus, help me to understand my specific role in impacting our culture.

How does our Biblical responsibility in the political arena coincide with the current culture? What about our leadership responsibilities in general? How do they relate to the political realm?

The misunderstood concept of “separation of church and state” is destroying our country. The secular humanist version of separation of church and state is effectively draining America of its spiritual vibrancy. Dysfunction abounds. We are being lulled to sleep with the choruses and lullabies of humanity. Unfortunately, most Americans currently look at both politics and the church on the same horizontal plane, giving them equal weight and little distinction.

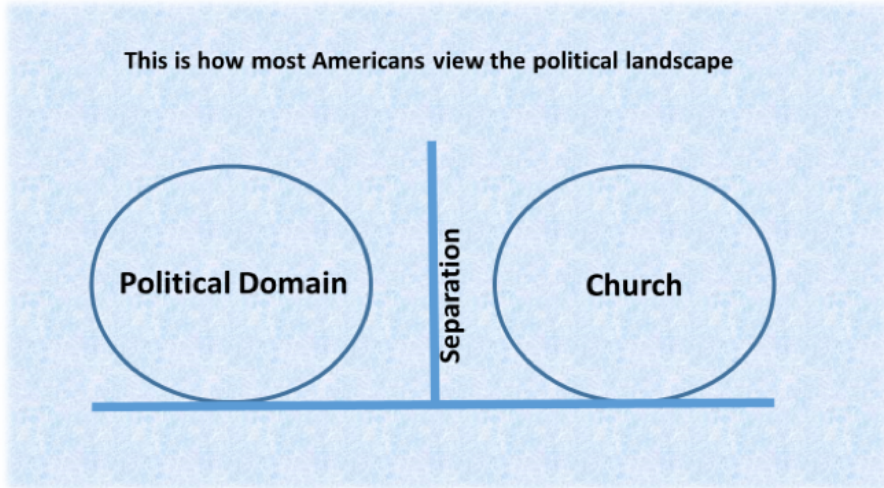


Illustration 1.2

In the world's eyes and among many Christians, these spiritual "sandboxes" are simply providing different functionality and utility. In other words, Christians have the ability to consume what they need in each sandbox with very little reverence given to His church. America has been brainwashed (indoctrinated) into thinking that this is normal and that we can do nothing about it. Beyond that, our young people think that this version of America is America, not understanding the undermining influences that have been at work to get us to this point. This is not the America that I see in the early development of our country. It is a well-known fact that in America, the Christian consensus that once existed on our shores has vanquished. The slow and steady descent of our morality as a nation is quite evident.

This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof:

from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. (2 Timothy 3:1-7)

With the inception of our American form of government centuries ago, our forefathers instinctively knew the difference between the morality of good public policy and civil discourse and governance from a policy that stems from an unenlightened society. Even the unbelieving masses understood the difference between the virtues of godly morality and the despair derived from the shadows of darkness.

Our Christian forefathers' religious beliefs and their moral convictions once radiated in the public halls of freedom and liberty. Most Christian public servants now cower in the corner with fear. They rationalize their "Eeyore-like" view of the "state of the state" (or state of the union for that matter) pointing to the end times and the ultimate destruction of the world and the ongoing deterioration of societal values. In so doing, they (we) have decided to play in a public policy sandbox that has been designed by the world and is their unenlightened version of how we are to conduct our governmental affairs. Christians continue to underestimate and fail to understand the depth and breadth of our civic responsibility to "redeem the times" (Ephesians 5:16), to exercise control over (our dominion responsibilities noted in Genesis 1:26), to direct the affairs of (our stewardship responsibilities noted in 1 Corinthians 4:2), and lead (spirit-driven right of leadership given us in Acts 1:8).

God has given us the "Genesis Mandate" of leadership in Genesis 2:15 as a model for our imitation. God told Adam to dress and to keep the Garden of Eden. We must labor sacrificially as servant leaders desiring to cultivate, provide, and protect God's creation as investors, not consumers. I believe that the same model can be used in the political arena. Are you an investor or consumer of our government here in America?

For those who are willing to stand in the gaps and lead, we do so with an unfair advantage. We lead with the Spirit of God directing our paths. We lead not by forging a superficial Christianity for political expediency.

No. Christianity should never be considered a political strategy, it should exhibit life itself in the political arena through the fullness of abiding in Christ Jesus. Christians need to do more and push ahead with a renewed focus and commitment.¹⁵

¹⁵ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Our Puritan Forefathers

Please help me to see, understand, and internalize the aspects of Christian history that we need to carry forward.

The early Puritans had an entirely unique blueprint and often used the phrase “stepping stones” in their description of what they were trying to accomplish. They wanted to be spiritual “stepping stones” for all those who followed. They wanted to pave a righteous path for posterity that included their conversation and civic responsibilities. Yes, their public service was informed from their deeply held Christian beliefs, and they were willing to share those sentiments at a moment’s notice. They were in no way restricted, nor did they feel compelled to only share their religious and/or public policy convictions when in environments of safety, or with those of kindred spirits. They were always ready to share the hope that they had for a brighter tomorrow (Jesus Christ).

Their godly conversation and policy views were saturated with the moral law and standards of an Almighty God. God’s moral law stood as their beacon of light. Aggressively voicing their opinions in the public arena was their standard practice. Jesus Christ and the Word of God were the stepping stones adamantly communicated toward the hope of building a Christ-principled nation. Pastor Jonathan Mayhew exclaimed, “You are assigned by Divine Providence, in the appointed order of things, the protector of unborn ages, whose fate depends on your virtue.”

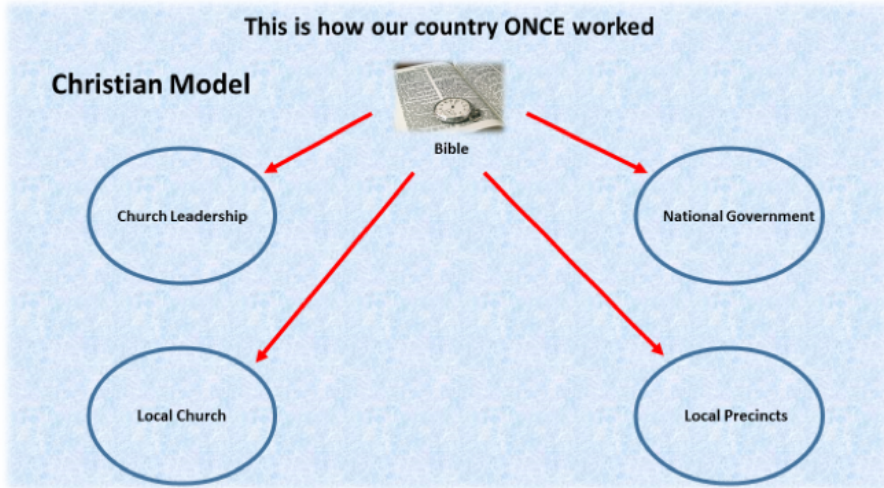


Illustration 1.5

The historical and traditional view of our politics had the Bible right in the center- driving our country forward. God's moral law was revered by most of its citizenry during this period of American history and had enormous sway over every aspect of life. Because of the way we worshipped and acknowledged Him back then, great men who were spiritually minded helped shape and commission the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution of the United States of America. These are documents for the ages that acknowledge the power of an Almighty God.

We are truly one nation under God. When Christians determined to live holy and righteous lives before Him and exercised those beliefs in all of the sandboxes of life, real change happens. These same principles and beliefs exist for us today. We simply must pick up the mantle for Christ and be determined to live every second of every day for the glory of God in whatever sandbox we happen to be in at the time. Stand tall and never let the world strip you of your Christian joy! Will you rise to the occasion and let God use you in the public service arena?

While the United States of America is a long way from Pilgrim, Puritan, and Colonial Christianity, we are still considered the flagship and shining light of everything that is free, decent, pure, and right. We are still one nation

under God!¹⁶

¹⁶ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

A Blessed Nation

Dear Lord, I want to be able to appreciate our great nation while fighting the spiritual battles necessary to keep our spiritual vibrancy.

We are a blessed nation. The righteous hand of a holy God has seen fit to protect this great country of ours. The freedoms we currently enjoy are unparalleled in the annals of history. While our political conversation may be of an unseemly and harsh nature, God continues to bless us. We continue to be an ally and close friend to Israel. God will bless those that pray for the peace of Israel and want to be her friend (Psalm 122:6).

God also sees the millions of devoted Christian men and women who authentically want to serve a risen Savior and gather each Sunday to proclaim His name. It doesn't go unnoticed by our righteous King. We must continue to break down the walls of separation between church and state (incorrectly and poorly defined, I might add) and resurrect the godly Christian virtue in the public arena. We have a chance to change history and establish a new type of public service and leadership that enriches the foundations of our great country. I am proud to call the United States of America my country but am gravely concerned about the erosion taking place in our spiritual foundations relating to our politics. The best way for me to accurately describe the beauty of our great country and what it means to me is to relate two specific definitions from a book I recently published.

A BLESSED NATION

- A defined geographical barrier of protection for the freedoms and liberties of conscience that a sovereign God has ordained and so richly blessed us with, that I am pleased to call my country.
- A hiding place and a refuge for those seeking to experience the totality of freedom in the United States of America through the processes of entry appropriated and enforced by law.

The running theme in all of my previous books continues in this one- that of adopting a Christian worldview as a lens through which we see all that is around us, rather than adapting our Christianity to the world surrounding us. This principle rings just as true in the political arena as it does in the spiritual, familial and societal arenas. If we are to have constancy of purpose, we must have consistency in perception. Will you join me in procuring the holy lens through which we view everything in our world?¹⁷

¹⁷ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Two Political Realities

Please give me the wisdom to be able to communicate a clear position on where we are as a nation.

Now that we have identified our Biblical responsibility to honor Christ in all we do and looked at the cultural and historical implications, I would like to describe the conditions of two separate and distinct public service realities. The current state of public discourse and the ensuing civic sentimentalities have reached a fever pitch that is unrecognizable at any time in the history of our great country. The experiment called the United States of America is crying for reprieve from the hatred and vitriol being vigorously spewed towards its constitutional republic framework.

This infused hatred in our public discourse cuts across party lines and even cannibalizes its own when expedient to preserve power, position, and the status quo. The Christian idealism of fairness, justice, safety, and the moral authority once emanating from the Word of God and displayed in our political system is now seemingly beyond our grasp in the spiritual and cultural realms of governance. The truths behind the deterioration and disintegration of our social and spiritual contract with God and one another, along with our civic responsibility, must be placed at the feet of those who are spiritually enlightened (His church).

We should not look to others who may have different policy opinions than

we do and cry foul for want of someone to blame. We must not lament that the current conditions of public service are the result of the enemy's inroads and that it's "all their fault." Christian men and women need to self-reflect and scrutinize their individual roles in allowing the world (secular humanism) to crowd out the once highly esteemed Christian virtues inherent in our civil discourse and godly conversation of the past.

We must also stand ready to admit that there are times that we (His Church) bow to the policies of our political ideology at the expense of our Christian virtue which is found in His Word. The former must never be able to find a safe haven in the latter outside of His Word. In other words, Christians must never turn a blind eye to the delicacies of ideology (political thinking) when it is in direct opposition to God's moral law. Will you allow me to politely say, "Never, never, never"?¹⁸

¹⁸ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

The Current Political Sandbox

Father, we are asking that you will give mercy and grace to those public servants who are standing tall in the face of adversity.

The best way to level-set the spiritual state of the union is to lay down the overwhelming facts of where we are in public discourse and Christian civic responsibility. Let's clearly define and articulate the country's perception of those who currently serve in a public capacity, along with their respective motivations and what they hope to achieve.

In other words, what is the end game for many of our public servants? The current sandbox is filled with democrats, Republicans, and a host of other parties desiring to hold power, persuade, and impact the culture with their respective forms of government and public policy, i.e., party platforms. They come from all walks of life- each wanting to leave a legacy by affecting significant change in the United States. They want to be revered, esteemed, and achieve social standings that are much higher than what we would consider to be an average citizen. They want to be considered the elite of society. There is no disguising or mistaking their ambition. For the most part, their ambitious motivation rings loud and clear under the guise of service to our country. Quite frankly, they are serving themselves.

Let's consider a few one-word descriptors that additionally illustrate the perception that most Americans have of those who serve and the offices they represent. One has to wonder if we are describing the character traits of King

Saul himself!

- Power
- Greed
- Inaction
- Self-Preservation
- Hatred
- Pride
- Elitism
- Gridlock
- Corruption
- Self-Serving
- Self-Self Aggrandizing
- Vitriol
- Compromise
- Grandstanding
- Reelection

To be fair, we must also recognize those uncommon leaders and politicians in our society who are selfless public servants who strive to remain above the fray of what it means to be a national, state, or local political insider. They are humble servants doing their best for their countrymen, and occasionally, even give God the glory. It is a blessing from above when we hear Christian public servants expressing hope in our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. There is no ego or sense of exaggerated self-worth in these uncommon individuals.

Beyond those few servant leaders currently serving in our government, what does the rest of society look like? How is society in general adjusting to the world's version of the political arena? Are they effectively "redeeming the time" and trying to restore our Christian responsibility to its former glory? The easy answer to these questions would be to talk about all of the good that Christian men and women who serve in public and private leadership capacities do for our country and thank them for their service. We thank them for communicating clear Christian positions and standing up and fighting

for the integrity and historical context of our rich Christian heritage. They stand tall and fight for life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. They use the Bible as their moral compass when making decisions.

We should recognize those public servants with a measure of commendation commensurate with the faith and dedication displayed. I truly believe this with all of my heart! However, the more difficult answer to those questions demands a much more in depth, contemplative, and strategic determination when evaluating our current leaders' impact. In addition, we must also identify those specific leaders in society who can impact the masses for the cause of Christ on a larger and more personal scale.

Christians who serve in a public capacity, including pastors, deacons, elders, and those in other leadership positions, need to realize that they are currently playing in the wrong public service sandbox. In many cases across our country, the Latin phrase, *Qui Tacet Consentire*, may apply—translated, “he who is silent is understood to consent”. Leaders must do more! We must not consent by remaining silent.

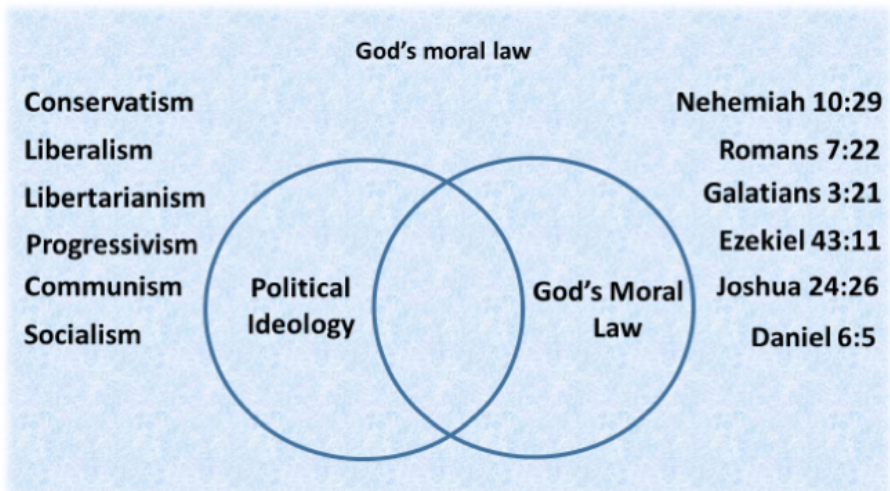


Illustration 1.6

As Christians, we must live and breathe the moral law contained in God's Word. When there is overlap between God's moral law and our political thinking (our ideology), it certainly gives us a solid basis of discussion and a firm foundation for creating public policy and the corresponding party platforms. However, we must also be extremely discerning of everything that doesn't line up with His moral law, regardless of party affiliation.

We should be so full of godly wisdom and so grounded in His Word that our radars of discernment can pick up anything that reeks of anti-God sentiment and policy. When we do pick up those anti-God sentiments, whether it be within the particular party of our choice or not, we must voice our displeasure and concern. As stated previously, when we remain silent, it appears to mean that we consent. We must never let the world think Christians are consenting to the forces of evil. This country was founded on the principles of free speech, which still includes rigorous debate, discussion, and refinement on all of the issues, without respect of persons or party affiliation.

When we do remain silent, we inadvertently support a position of absolute power, despotism, and dictatorship. The old adage "absolute power corrupts and power corrupts absolutely" applies in this hypothetical scenario of remaining silent. No human law should ever contradict the law of nature (God's law) or the law of revelation. Our Christian worldview of politics and policies determines how we live our lives in accordance to spiritual law and human law, in that order. For those leaders who show us how to prioritize moral and civic duties, we can see you and hope to emulate the essence of your character, thank you!¹⁹

¹⁹ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Creating a New Political Sandbox

Please, Lord, give us the desire, clarity, and self-discipline to design an entirely new political sandbox that keeps the Constitution strong.

Next, we want to discuss the new sandbox. What are the characteristics of this new sandbox that can give us hope? The new political sandbox is a gift from God. It is both a revival in the hearts of mankind (personal holiness) and a renewed spiritual energy in our political arena all at the same time. It is an arena that reorients its public conversation and civic responsibilities back to the Bible with a traditional understanding and involvement.

Christians decide to unite and redesign the entire public service landscape (new political sandbox) under the influence of the Spirit of God. We shroud and build a hedge around our Constitution and Declaration of Independence with the impenetrable spirit of God's moral law. We decide that now is the time to take back control of the moral fiber of our country and bring it to the spiritual heights that only God Almighty Himself can do.

We submit as servant leaders; we obey the principles of God at all times; we fearlessly lead from the front with no regard for ourselves or well-being; we have no regard for position, rank, power, or societal standing; we engage in public discourse with the wisdom, grace, and ease that can only come from walking in the Spirit of God. Every conversation, every debate, and every discussion on the policy issues should be full of compassion and

CREATING A NEW POLITICAL SANDBOX

understanding with the intent of impacting His Kingdom. A kingdom is, of course, a form of political order. The Kingdom of God is one in which God is king, and clearly, God is a very different kind of king than King David or any other kings of the earth with whom we are familiar. He certainly is a much different ruler than any we have in our country today.

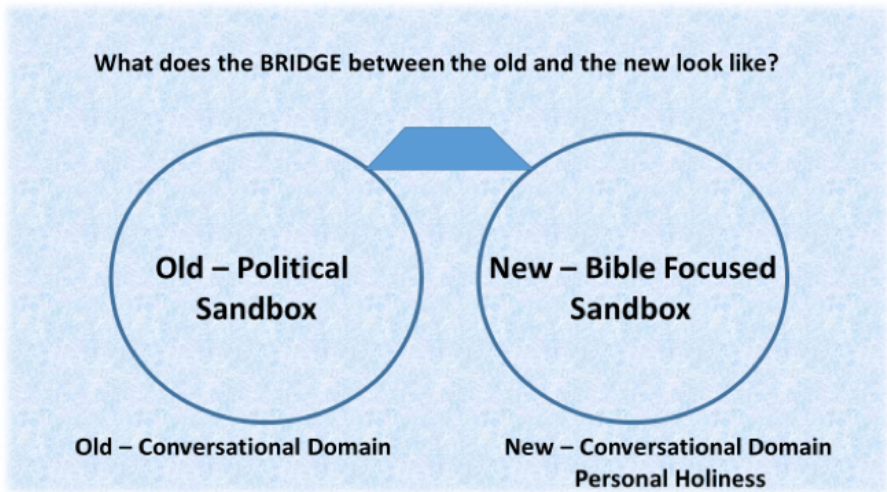


Illustration 1.7

We need Christian men and women who are willing to defect from the grip of Secular Humanist servitude found in the old political sandbox and are willing to “put on” the new Bible-centric and God-honoring version of public service. Refuse the one (Secular Humanism) and then fill our gas tanks with the blessings of the other (Bible-centered version). Let’s not miss the ultimate end of His vocational calling as citizens and public servants. That end is to love God and love people. The grace of God and the grace of faith will help change the landscape. The new political sandbox is filled with Christian virtue and the fruit of the Spirit found in Galatians.

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness,

*goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. (Galatians 5:22–25)
(KJV)*

While we will never compromise on any policy issues that are in direct conflict to God's moral law, we engage in those issues in an entirely different manner. We do so with a respect and collegiality for others that honors the positions they have been elected to represent. In other words, we talk to and respect one another as human beings. In addition, every piece of legislation (bill) that comes before our elected officials is evaluated in lieu of biblical, moral, and ethical standards and context. We go directly to the Bible and cite chapter and verse and herald those positions unapologetically.

We resolve our differences through justice, rigorous debate, and the rule of law. We develop the technology necessary to link specific pieces of legislation directly to the Bible and other historical, factual, traditional, and precedent-leading insights that help condition our minds and our hearts to a Christian leadership worldview. We also develop a relationship platform for engaging others that I will call The Fundamental Orders of Christian Governance and Civic Responsibility. We will use this as our guide to change the landscape. Beyond this (as previously mentioned), we will continue to tear down the walls of Separation of Church and State through the appropriate legal channels and put the focus back on our individual freedoms expressed in the Bill of Rights. The freedom of religious expression must be front and center. We will clearly articulate the falsehood of the misconstrued intent of the separation clause found in the letter that Thomas Jefferson wrote to his Connecticut constituents. We will fiercely proclaim the freedom of religion expressed in the first amendment and the liberty of conscience that our forefathers so ardently supported.

We will continue to support and push legislation that allows public school children to fully take advantage of their ability to get off-site religious instruction through the Released Time programs in our state. Finally, we will propose legislation that brings the Released Time program from the shadows

of obscurity to be included as mainstream high school course credit. The winds of change are blowing, and we need to do more as Christian leaders! If we were to add one-word descriptors for this new sandbox they would sound something like this:

Civility
Grace
Love
Respect
Honesty
Transparency
Selflessness
Humility
Faith
Morality
Ethics
Action
Dependability
Hope
Results
Vision
Change
Leadership
Service

The real challenge for Christians is not in grasping and understanding the concepts of change in our political system. The real challenge comes in the execution of those responsibilities.²⁰

²⁰ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

From the Pulpit

Heavenly Father, we ask that you would encourage pastors across America to stand up and lead in the politics of our great country.

Many preachers across the United States of America are also playing in the world's sandbox of Christian civic duty and responsibility. For the most part, they remain silent and are fearful, worrying that they will either offend someone in the congregation or think they are breaking a law. Some pastors have even been so conditioned (indoctrinated) by our culture that they believe discussions on public policy, civic responsibility, and the role of government is not proper from the pulpit.

Pastors need to be encouraged, uplifted in prayer, and reminded that the only thing off-limits to them is unfairly influencing the outcome of an election by endorsing or denigrating a specific candidate from the pulpit. Beyond that, taking positions from the Bible and challenging believers on the public policy and legislative issues of the day is well within the purview of their ministerial roles. Christian attorney David Gibbs III sums it up best when he indicates that there are no limits when discussing issues from the pulpit.

In private, a pastor's personal views on the candidates is another matter entirely. Pastors can freely express their opinions in private. They are within their legal rights to do so. Please do not misunderstand my position here. I am not talking about having every service filled with policy discussions, legislation, or other aspects of public life. No, I am not talking about pounding

the pulpit with an onslaught of political discourse. However, I am saying that pastors and all those in positions of Christian leadership in the United States must do more to lead our country. Who else can better articulate from the Bible what those civic responsibilities represent?

The Word of God is first and foremost a heavenly story about Jesus Christ. He is the author and finisher of our faith. In the Old Testament, we see the hoped-for Messiah in all of the various described “types” of Christ. In the New Testament, we read of prophecy fulfilled and the inspired depiction of Christ and His church. However, the Bible is also a historical account of our Judeo-Christian heritage and one that comprehensively describes a compelling story about the process of nation-building. In the Old Testament, that nation-building process was focused mainly on Israel. Starting in the book of Genesis, we see human beings entering into vertical social and spiritual contracts with their Creator as well as horizontal social and spiritual contracts with one another. There were kings, judges, priests, prophets, and other leadership positions established to help them provide, protect, and govern for the good of the people. There is no getting around these facts.

In the New Testament, we again see a nation-building process but this time it is predominantly focused on the spiritual design of God’s church. We are given hierarchies of authority and the roles and responsibilities of all those who God wants in positions of leadership. Christ lived in an eternal state of governance. He lived in an occupied land where ultimate political power rested with the Roman Empire and the proximate political power was the Sanhedrin (the Jewish court) that ruled over Israel. Since the Sanhedrin was a religious body, this meant that Jesus, like all Jews before Him, lived in a theocracy. The relationships and key learnings gleaned from the theocracy of Christ’s time and the Constitutional Republic in the United States are linked and should be impressionably vivid. In other words, the civic leadership responsibility of pastors, deacons, lay people, and those in the political arena are all on full display in the Word of God.

I pray that Christian leaders everywhere will challenge, encourage, and show fellow believers what their specific biblical responsibilities are for being part of the nation-building process here in America. Yes, as long as we are

considered a country, we are in an ongoing nation-building mode. In a democracy, we tend to think of partisan politics, but the actual word comes from the Greek polis, which simply means “the city-state.” Politics is how we organize as a community; whether it is a democracy, theocracy, autocracy, or kingdom, it is still a political order.

What our nation becomes in large part is derived by those who are willing to get involved and lead. If pastors and other Christian leaders across America are unwilling to lead in the area of Christian public discourse and civic responsibility, the only other option is to receive our instruction from the world and allow them to define our roles. Unfortunately, that is exactly what is happening across America. However, it wasn't always that way. With little hesitation, preachers from yesteryear would engage in compelling discussion and debate about the church members' roles and responsibility in the public service sandbox. They were eager to help shape public opinion on the issues with a biblical perspective. Likewise, congregations eagerly anticipated how their pastors would respond to the specific social and policy issues of the day. Pastors were unafraid to engage on the issues and put their stakes in the ground either in private or in public conversation. They were unafraid because their stakes were heaven sent and supported high moral and ethical standards straight from the Word of God. Their stakes supported God's moral law.

The enthusiasm to lead out front on issues of governance has all but disappeared in our country. During the period surrounding the Revolutionary War, pastors were particularly vocal on issues and were eager to share them from the pulpit. Brothers and sisters in Christ, as a direct parallel, we should understand that we are in a cultural revolution, and it is one that desperately needs our attention, involvement, and leadership. Spiritual warfare abounds! I am not saying this to scare you or to paint a picture that might seem wholly magnificent and illusory in its proclamation. No, I share this with those of us who need to understand the depths of entanglement that our current system

of public service has with the world.²¹

²¹ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

The Superhighway

Lord, we are pleading with you to give us a renewed vision of how this country should return to the days of old, when Christianity permeated every aspect of life, including our godly conversation, civic duties, and leadership responsibilities.

Let's now talk about the superhighway that will create the necessary convergence to lead our country forward:

The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul. (Proverbs 16:17)

The superhighway connecting the current and new sandboxes is constructed with three primary components, which will provide the spiritual focus that will guide us along our way. The assumptions, Fundamental Orders of Christian Governance and Civic Responsibility, and the action plan that follows will help us consider "in our hearts that the LORD he is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath and there is none else" (Deuteronomy 4:39)

However, we must also remember that all political orders should be judged against the Kingdom as a standard, an "impossible but relevant ideal" for

which Christians are called to strive. This, then, is what Jesus has to do with public policy. Jesus invites us to enter the Kingdom, and by striving toward the Kingdom, we are irrevocably committed to striving toward an impossible ideal in our community life and our social and political order.

The biblical mandates and principles that we will discuss should remind us to ring the bells of Bible reasoning and traditionalism in our political system every chance we get. In a sense, we become C.R.O.s (Chief Reminding Officers) to instill godly values and hope in all those who choose to follow. We need to constantly remind the world and each other what the true focal points of life represent. Congregations need to be reminded repeatedly about what the Bible says (vision) and the corresponding actions necessary to effect real change in the body politic. This journey will be long and arduous but filled with joy unspeakable and full of glory.

The Plan

Lord, we ask for wisdom in how to proceed.

You will notice that the first two bullets in each section of this chapter are the same. They are purposefully written to impress upon the readers the vital importance of prayer, personal holiness, and the impact of our words.

Assumptions

- We desire and pray for personal revival and holiness that spreads across our state and our country (1 Thess. 5:17).
- The way that we speak and relate to people is filled with the grace and love of Christ (Prov. 25:11).
- Uncommon discipline will be needed for those who lead in this undertaking (Ezek. 22:30).
- Christians who engage with the spiritual energy needed to impact the culture and our political system will be greatly persecuted (2 Tim. 3:12).
- There will be significant human failure along the way as able Christian men and women will say and do things that are not in alignment with our founding principles that are based on His Word (Gen. 3:6).
- Moving from the current sandbox to the new sandbox is a process that will take generations (Eph. 5:16).

THE PLAN

- Christian leaders desire to serve a cause much bigger than themselves, and that is the cause of Jesus Christ (Prov. 3:5).
- The news media will be against us and work overtime to disrupt our progress (Eph. 6:12).
- Pastors, public servants, and other Christian leaders across America have a renewed interest in leading our country in this biblical framework (2 Chr. 29:30).
- Power, pride, and self-preservation in the public domain is a recipe for continuing down a well-traveled and treacherous path of Christian annihilation in the United States and will be shunned at every turn (Prov. 16:18).
- We show no respect of persons in judgment but conduct ourselves in ways that are fair, firm, and with moral virtue.

The Fundamental Orders of Christian Governance and Civic Responsibility

- We desire and pray for personal revival and holiness that spreads across our state and our country (1 Thess. 5:17).
- The way that we speak and relate to people is filled with the grace and love of Christ (Prov. 25:11).
- There is no king but King Jesus (Ps. 22:28).
- Our elected officials love God, and they love people (Matt. 22:37–40).
- The word politics is not part of our conversational domain (it has evolved to represent everything that is wrong with governance, and the use of the word must be avoided at all costs) (Matt. 10:16).
- Public service and leadership unto the Lord now redefine our mission (1 John 3:18).
- We die to ourselves (as Christ died for us) every minute of every day in the public arena (Rom. 6:12).
- In the hierarchy of authority, politics and governance takes its rightful place beneath Christ, the family, and His church (Acts 5:29).
- We strive for godly excellence in everything we do (Rom. 11:36).

- We are zealous supporters of the freedom of religion and have no desire to create a Christian theocracy as a state-sponsored government church (Eph. 4:3).
- We ardently support the United States Constitution and the Declaration of Independence.
- Our Christian radars of discernment (the Holy Spirit) must be increasingly sharp, as wolves in sheep's clothing will try to wreak havoc with our desired ends (Matt. 2:12).

Action Plan

- We desire and pray for personal revival and holiness that spreads across our state and our country (1 Thess. 5:17).
- The way that we speak and relate to people is filled with the grace and love of Christ (Prov. 25:11).
- Released Time Programs, Good News Clubs, and other Christian nonprofits in public schools are key focal points that will help develop our children toward the things of God and away from things of the devil (Prov. 22:6).
- We must aggressively build relationships and alliances with those who support our cause (Prov. 18:24).
- We access news channels, social media, and other media outlets that will be sympathetic to traditional and biblical forms of governance (Neh. 2:7).
- We write op-eds to support all of our positions and circulate them (Prov. 25:25).
- We develop an entirely new conversation for public policy that relates everything back to the Bible (Ps. 19:14).
- We create innovative public policy apps and other technology platforms that are designed for a biblical worldview understanding and application of legislative initiatives (Ps. 119:16).
- We fervently sponsor and support faith-based and morally sound legislation (Ps. 40:8).

THE PLAN

- We stand in solidarity behind the founding Bible-based principles of our new endeavor and renewed focus while minimizing lofty human thinking, expression, and communication that does not support our Christian ideals (Rom. 16:18).
- Church leadership must creatively design and emphasize a plan to inspire their congregations in their civic responsibility (annual emphasis month or week) (2 Pet. 3:1).
- We work tirelessly to the aforementioned ends (Prov. 6:6).

If we will pray these verses over our lives and commit to the action of applying our worldview with a desire to impact the culture for Christ through civic involvement, we will lead with passion.²²

²² A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

God's Moral Law

Dear God, please enlighten our minds to a deeper appreciation and understanding of your moral law in a political-theological context.

In this article, we want to look at the importance of God's moral law in relation to the laws of the land. The functionality, utility, and practicability of written law can only be realized with its supreme and ultimate enforcement. Laws of a porous nature will not stand the test of time. Unwritten law, when duly enforced in its totality, becomes absolute authority governing the lives of those in its wake. The morays of civilized society have equal weight and a just balance of power helping to normalize the baser instincts of mankind. However, the exactness, prudence, and absolute nature of each (both written and unwritten) will only reign supreme when abiding in the attachment and consummation to the moral law of God Almighty. When formulating the laws of the land, we must never let the delicacies of political thinking and reasoning without God overshadow our commitment to God's moral law.

Furthermore, the legitimacy of our laws (written and unwritten) will only come by the consent of the people, by which they aspire to be protected, nourished, and developed to higher planes of moral, spiritual, and physical well-being. In addition, I would also argue that when brute force (in any of its derivative forms and subtle manifestations) is necessary to obligate one's constituency and citizenry to comply with the legislative, judicial, and

executive dictates of the land, that authority is then rendered illegitimate and ceases to function as a recognized entity. Despots and tyrants heralding unenforceable proclamations and writs of compliance (executive orders and regulatory dictates) will always give way to absolute authority that is shrouded in the precepts of truth, righteousness, justice, and holiness found in God's moral law.

Enforcement, consent of the governed, alignment to God's moral law, and an abiding affection and faith toward the laws of the land by its citizenry will procure a most favorable and long-lasting result that will be highly esteemed by posterity. Those nations living by this standard will be set apart with godly favor, heavenly significance, and earthly commendation even by those who do not share her passions or her resolve.²³

²³ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

God's Righteous Cause

Lord, we are asking for direction and confirmation by seeking your face.

What are the key ingredients of a just and righteous “cause” that can spur the emotions of a few, leading to unparalleled debts of compassion, commitment, and activism that can change the world? I believe that God uses the convergence of four separate and distinct forces of heavenly operation that produce an “other worldly” and spirit-filled comprehension of inspired events.

First, there must be unity of spirit. The Holy Spirit will always be the driving force of all just and righteous causes. The unity of Spirit I am referring to includes an appreciation for the spiritual gifts, thoughts, and contributions of all those committed to the cause. That unity also includes prayerful consideration for the principles, objectives, and praxis (the practice of our thinking) along with those called to participate and lead in this endeavor. There will always be an unparalleled rupture of spiritual conscience displayed in God-ordained causes.

Second, there must be union. The assembly and formation of a just and righteous cause necessitates a uniformity and organizational construct that supports a lasting commission. Furthermore, a grassroots energy should undergird the soul components of our resolve. All kindred spirits are welcome. When the people lead through grassroots involvement and

deliberative commitment, the leaders will invariably take notice and follow.

Third, harmony has to exist at all levels. While the motivation of each participant to the inspired cause may vary with the specific idiosyncratic nature of one's life and station of progressive sanctification (their individual lanes), the rapturous chorus of sweet harmony must permeate every jot and tittle of the aforementioned covenant. We need to die to self, put on the mind of Christ, and submit to a righteous cause that is much bigger than any one individual. That cause is Jesus Christ.

Fourth, the timing and convergence of the forces of this heavenly operation should be determined with absolute certainty as the call of God. We wait with the patience of Job for God's leading. We think with the wisdom of Solomon and "consider it well" before fulfilling our God-honoring commission. We act with the certainty and veracity of Joshua to accomplish God's will.

Whether we unify behind a joint cause or stand individually for a sole endeavor, we must check our motives against the Word of God and heed the Holy Spirit's leanings. May it not be our own will, but the will of God. May we remember that while we are governed by an earthly government, we belong to a heavenly kingdom.²⁴

²⁴ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Forgotten Quotes

With all humility, authenticity, and truth, I can recommend no alteration or abridgment to the following quotes. These quotes are truly for posterity and the ages, thus reminded.

In times like ours, it is good for us to take a moment, and meditate on the words of those who participated in the founding of our nation. When something breaks, or plans go awry, often we will go back to the beginning, asking: how was this built/planned? What was the creator's intentions/methods? If it was created this way, what was the reasoning? How do I use that information to make the product better or the plans succeed? In order to know how to fix issues or improve upon a status, we need to go back to the beginning. Put on the lenses of the creator or planner. Find out the intentions. If we would but do this for our current obstacles in our society, perhaps we would have a clearer vision of how to proceed.

And thus the American Republic, by illuminating the world with truth and liberty, would be exalted and made high among the nations, in praise, and in name, and in honor. I doubt not this is the honor reserved for us; I had almost said, in the spirit of prophecy, the zeal of the Lord of Host will accomplish this.

That her system of dominion must receive its finishing from religion; or, that from the diffusion of virtue among the people of any community would arise their greatest secular happiness; all which will terminate in this

conclusion: that holiness ought to be the end of all civil government – “that thou mayest be an holy people unto the Lord thy God.”

If men, not merely nominally Christians, but of real religion and sincere piety, joined with abilities, were advanced and called up to office in every civil department, how would it countenance and recommend virtue! But, alas! Is there not too much Laodiceanism in this land? Is not Jesus in danger of being wounded in the house of his friends?

-Ezra Stiles, The United States Elevated to Glory and Honor (1783)

This will of his Maker is called the law of nature. For as God, when He created matter, and endued it with a principle of mobility, established certain rules for the perpetual direction of that motion; so, when He created man and endued him with free will to conduct himself in all parts of life, He laid down certain immutable laws of human nature, whereby that free will is in some degree regulated and restrained, and gave him also the faculty of reason to discover the purport of those laws.

- Sir William Blackstone, Of the Nature of Laws in General

The free fruition of such liberties, immunities, and privileges as humanity, civility, and Christianity call for, as due to every man, in his place and proportion, without impeachment or infringement, hath ever been, and ever will be, the tranquility and stability of churches and commonwealths; and the denial or deprivation thereof, the disturbance, if not the ruin of both.’ Here is seen, in the early American lawmakers, the influence of the Christian element.

For the strength of a nation, especially of a republican nation, is in the intelligent and well-ordered homes of a people. And in proportion as the discipline of families is relaxed, will the happy organization of communities be affected, and the national character become vagrant, turbulent, or ripe for revolution.

This influence is most visible and operative in a republic. The intelligence and virtue of its every citizen have a heightened relative value. Its safety may be interwoven with the destiny of those whose birthplace is in obscurity. The springs of its vitality are liable to be touched, or the chords of its harmony to be troubled, by the rudest hands.

This wholesale migration from the smiling fields of merry England to an unexplored wilderness beyond a thousand leagues of sea was of itself a most romantic and thrilling event, and when viewed in the light of its historic results it becomes clothed with sublimity. The men who undertook this work were not at all free from self-consciousness. They believed that they were doing a wonderful thing. They felt themselves to be instruments in accomplishing a kind of "manifest destiny." Their exodus was that of a chosen people who were at length to lay the everlasting foundations of God's kingdom upon earth.

-The preamble to an early American Bill of Rights²⁵

²⁵ A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation, by Michael J. LaPierre (published in Houston, Texas by High Bridge Books), 2019.

Christian Activism

The time has come for Christian leaders to submit to the authority of Jesus Christ relating to our public conversation, civic responsibility, and governance. The praxis of political theology fundamentally supports a Christian leadership worldview. We must have both clarity of vision from a saving faith found in His Word along with the necessary actions to impact the culture for His Kingdom.

Outside of Christ and His church, no other organizational construct (government) on this earth can further hinder our spiritual progress if left to its own device. A wild and untamed government that is void of spiritual depth and moral understanding will soon disappear. Let the soul leave the physical body, and all the parts of the body cease to function. Let the Spirit be denied His place in the body politic, and the country ceases to exist or function as God has intended.

The only power that God recognizes in the body politic is the power of the Holy Spirit. All the rest is simply man's machinations, reasoning, and goodwill. On the other hand, an informed, passionate, and involved citizenry and congregation will act as a restraint on the ambitions of the uninspired portions of society who look to power, manipulation, coercion, and brute force to push their agendas. Christians will never have an impact on the culture for Christ unless we determine to be different. We (His church) must desire to create an entirely new public service sandbox and conversation for the glory of God.

Unity, union, and harmony will bring the necessary ingredients to engender a spiritual vibrancy that our community has never before seen. This is the

new frontier of Christian conservatism in the political arena. I truly believe that the creation and execution of this approach to godly public conversation and Christian civic responsibility will ignite a public service zeal that is unparalleled in American history since the Great Awakening. I want to remind us of one important point. This is NOT a political strategy. This is a selfless commitment to lay down our lives (Acts 20:24) and do what is right for our children, grandchildren, and our countrymen. This righteous cause will take place when men and women commit themselves to personal holiness and decide to get involved.

Will you rise and stand in the spiritual gaps of history and be willing to fight for righteousness in all areas of our political responsibility? Will you endeavor to first ratify and then legitimize this covenant of citizenry with your prayers and your actions?

That they may know that this is thy hand; that thou, LORD, hast done it. (Ps. 109:27)

Section V

CURRENT EVENTS

THE HERE & NOW

CURRENT EVENTS: THE HERE & NOW – Section V

With all of the political “goings-on” right now, we felt it important to add a section that gives you our perspective on current events. We hope that this bonus section helps you to think through and analyze current events with a Christian leadership worldview. To say that we are concerned about the current state of our country would be a gross understatement. We are at the precipice of implementing socialism on a scale not seen since the F.D.R. administrations. Team LaPierre believes that not only will we meet the F.D.R. socialist conditions of yesteryear, but the United States of America will significantly surpass them in scope under a Biden administration.

The democrat socialists now realize that the way to control the behavior of the masses and obligate them to excessive government overreach is to propagandize the Covid-19 health scare. I believe that the progressive left is gleeful that they were able to take Covid-19 “out for a spin” (lockdowns and Executive Orders) with untold and devastating consequences to our unalienable rights. The articles in this section will support an opinion that the progressive left and anti-God faction of America are chipping away at the pillars that support our Constitution. Patriots can never let this happen!

We must rise to meet every challenge that comes our way. We must fight the spiritual warfare necessary and engage in the political strategy/tactics necessary to thwart every piece of progressive liberal legislation. This is not the time to be playing nice with the policies of the left. We must be respectful

and have our conversation seasoned with the grace of the Almighty, while at the same time understanding the prevailing political winds of our day. While we are not fighting a kinetic war on the domestic home front, we are fighting an economic war; a propaganda war; a communications war; and a war to keep both our Bible and our Constitution sacred and relevant.

The Coronavirus Strategy

President Trump has done a masterful job leading us through the Coronavirus health scare. Trump and his team of senior advisors have checked most of the boxes. He is communicating to the public and keeping them in-the-know; leading with confidence; assigning the right team members; making tough and strategic health and economic decisions; while assuring the American people that we can get through this together.

However, there is one very important part of President Trump's strategy that needs to be elevated in importance. Prayer! I believe that he should call for a National Day of Prayer and Fasting and make prayer priority number one. In America, we have a long and storied history of former Presidents reaching out to the American citizenry in earnest and calling for a day of prayer and fasting during periods of crisis! As a person of faith (Christian), political scientist, and global strategist I would counsel President Trump to consider the following imperatives when fighting the Coronavirus.

1. Prayer – declare a National Day of Prayer and Fasting
2. Health – containment and eradication
3. Economic – Financial, monetary, and fiscal stability
4. Civil Liberties – create a framework for response that protects the freedoms and liberties of all Americans

5. Exit Strategy – make sure that American citizens know when we have won the war on the Coronavirus and when the strategic measures introduced to fight the virus will be rolled back and rescinded

One of the fundamental duties in the Constitution given to our elected Presidents is to keep our country and its citizens safe and to provide for its general welfare. I believe that the above considerations are critical to a successful outcome. However, like most wartime Presidents (in this case a war on the Coronavirus pandemic), Donald Trump must be vigilant to deconstruct and roll back any/all situational decision-making and encumbrances to pre-war levels. In other words, we must not let any of the Coronavirus decisions further bloat our government in the long-term. If we are not committed to deconstructing the Coronavirus strategy when the war is won with a SPECIFIC EXIT STRATEGY, our government officials will have created another problem far worse..... more power to the “administrative” state.

Coronavirus- Slow & Steady

The precedence that has been set with the handling of the Coronavirus will have long-lasting impacts on the political, economic, health/well-being, and spiritual domains in the United States of America and beyond for decades to come. We have started charting a course that could have devastating consequences on the freedoms and liberties that we currently enjoy. While the intentions and corresponding decisions may seem reasonable and utterly harmless to us, they have quickly led us to a place where big government gets more of a foothold and controls every aspect of our lives. The last time I checked, I am a free American.

Political

The known facts convincingly support the claim that the progressive left thinks that big government can solve all of the answers to worldly problems. That includes the Coronavirus. Did you not know that our government will be the force that snuffs out this virus? Did you not know that our government is the all-powerful and all-encompassing entity that will drive this virus to its knees? Silly stuff! If we are not careful with our decision-making at this particular juncture, we could open a door that we can never shut again. Think about the consequences. In the future, every time there is a world health concern (generic as it may be like the flu or common cold), our government could swoop in and take decisive action to control additional aspects of our lives.

Where we go, who we see, where we shop, and how we interact with our fellow human-beings could all be manipulated under the guise of a “National

Emergency.” While I believe that President Trump took prudent measures, my concern is when the progressive left assumes control of our government. Can you imagine how they are going to fabricate and manipulate health narratives toward a redistribution of corporate and personal wealth? My guess is that the left is strategizing right now how to pull this off. In the future, the democrat socialists will use the precedence of this current health scare to change the balance of power toward a collectivist and totalitarian orientation.

In other words, the long and tyrannical arm of the government will paint you inside of a panic-stricken and mob rule sanctuary that will end many of your freedoms under the Bill of Rights. While prudence and wisdom must reign, codifying ANY restrictions on our individual freedoms is the wrong way to go! Today, the government calls it a pandemic, tomorrow, they will use their powers to call it something else to control the masses.

Economic

The progressive left has used this health concern to undermine the economic foundations of our great country. President Trump had our economy cruising along at unapparelled levels never before seen in our history. In a matter of weeks, the media has changed the economic landscape forever. Unfortunately, the potential exists that during every flu and cold season we are now going to shut down critical drivers of our economy because the progressive left will incite fear and panic. Most of the left-leaning and/or panic-stricken institutions have followed suit and are shutting down.

The NCAA, MLB, NBA, NHL, public schools, universities, shopping malls, and a host of other institutions/venues are buying into the hysteria and mob rule mentality. It could cripple our economy! Moving forward, does bowing down to unknown world health concerns become the new normal? Do we now build in lackluster economic growth in our forecasts because of fear during the yearly flu season? Are we going to allow the media and progressive left faction of society to manipulate our unalienable rights and freedoms? The democrat socialists want the United States of America to operate like a socialist candy store. Everything is free. We need to be very careful not to

move into an FDR mentality like we had during the Great Depression era. It would be throwing good money after bad.

Health/Well-being

I do NOT want the government to tell me how to manage and control my health and well-being. Obama Care forced American citizens to purchase healthcare or risk a financial penalty. Trump eliminated the mandate. The progressive left wants to take us to a single-payer healthcare system (government-controlled) that impacts as much as one-fifth of our GDP. This is called the redistribution of corporate and personal wealth. This is socialism! Restricting my health and well-being freedoms in any fashion during this health scare is an affront to my civil liberties and constitutional rights.

Spiritual

During this health scare, we need to “crowd in” the faith of God’s Word and believe that an Almighty God is in control. God is sovereign. We need to rely on our Master to get us through this health scare and not rely on the machinations of mankind.

The Word of God tells us not to be “hasty” in our decision-making. It tells us to “consider it well” before jumping into things that we may regret. I believe that prudence, wisdom, and slow and steady wins this health scare race. Remember, politicians have a very difficult time of “envisioning” the law of unintended consequences, especially, during election-year politics.

The COVID-19 Umbrella Model

President Trump did a masterful job of navigating the complexities of the Covid-19 crisis. As a former Global Strategist who has built predictive index and forecasting models, I tried to look at the Covid-19 crisis in “picture form” and simplify the complexity down to some base elements. Simplification is the whole idea of creating models in the first place. While hard data is useful in dissecting the harmful and ravishing effects of Covid-19, I like to look at two other significant models that have lasted over 200 years.

The Picture – We have an umbrella called the Constitution of the United States of America. Underneath that umbrella there are three primary and critical subcomponents:

- A. Health and Well-being
- B. Civil Liberties
- C. Economic Freedom

Each of these three major subcomponents must be protected at all costs. Ultimately, the decision-making for each subcomponent **MUST** move in unison. In other words, we must give equal weight and consideration to each component while giving supreme deference to the bylaws of America... i.e. Our Constitution. If we focus on the extremes of either one, we put our country out of balance and at great risk. If our focus is only on health, saving lives, with decisions that are made in a vacuum, then our civil liberties

and the economy go out the window. This will destroy the foundations of America. If our focus is on the extreme ends of our civil liberties, then our commitment to health, saving lives (life), and the economy suffers. If it is all about the economy and a thirst for mammon (the almighty dollar), then our health, savings lives, and civil liberties are overrun by corporate and personal greed. A difficult balance, indeed!

We have two models/documents that support the conclusions above. The first is the Declaration of Independence. “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.” Of course, we all know that the first pass was “life, liberty and the pursuit of property.” The Declaration of Independence supports my conclusion of moving in unison with the vital and critical subcomponents based on its own words. Second, is the Constitution of the United States of America. “We the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.” Once again, the Constitution supports my conclusion of moving in unison with the vital and critical subcomponents based on its own words.

We must use the Constitution as our foundational basis for creating any current and future policy in times of crisis. Rule of law and our founding documents do not go out the window because we are in crisis mode. In times like these we need a stalwart of truth and anchor of freedom to keep us stable when crises hit—unprecedented or not. This must be the baseline from which we start. Let us not become short-sighted and sacrifice our long-term liberties for temporary safety.

Eyes Wide Open

Several of my supporters encouraged me to expand my thinking on the potential for partisan politics, worldview predispositions, and data manipulation from the so-called healthcare experts during the COVID-19 pandemic. The following is an expansion and continuation of my discourse on the handling of this global crisis in the United States.

Why is it that those on both the left and the right have felt it their sworn duty to shut down good honest, wholesome, and well-intentioned debate on the Coronavirus crisis? For some reason, those who voted for and/or supported the \$2 Trillion relief package have felt it their responsibility to “crush” and shut down those of us who have been concerned! They want to make you feel like you are not “on the team” if you have shared too many opinions that might expose further consideration on a multitude of issues. The discussion goes much deeper than the relief package itself. We need to look well beyond the immediacy of the needed relief to individuals, entrepreneurs, and corporate shareholders. We need to take a very close look at the way this virus has been portrayed by the “healthcare experts.” Why? The counsel that they are providing President Trump will have a far-reaching impact on future generations. The spin levied by the media and political pundits is raging at warp speed. It bears repeating that the way we handle this crisis will have a direct impact on the spiritual, economic, democratic, and constitutional foundations of our great country. Therefore, it is imperative that the health care experts and those modeling and forecasting this virus come clean and give us the truth. With the full story and “eyes wide open” American citizens can then make decisions for their families and loved ones at the local level.

In other words, at the “We the People” level!

Part of my job as a Global Strategist at a Fortune 50 organization (\$65 Billion) was forecasting. We would put models together and use regression analysis and build econometric models to predict industry behavior. Every model that I ever built was based on a very LONG list of assumptions. Our assumptions included things that we thought could happen or theoretically should happen. Every model has theoretical analysis and assumptions built it. Human reasoning, intellectual capacity, and worldview perceptions are part of the built-ins for those “expert opinions.” I guess you could say it is the part of modeling and forecasting where the “faith” element comes into play. Once the models were deployed and tested, adjustments were made commensurate with industry and customer behavior. The same thing will happen with the Coronavirus. With a long enough timeframe, we will have the “big data” needed to help us make more informed decisions along with the needed adjustments. At the same time, I think it naive to believe that modeling and adjustments are not prone to ideological bents. Oftentimes, data is manipulated to tell a story that supports a predetermined conclusion. I don’t care if they are forecasting experts, healthcare experts, or elected politicians. Everyone is predisposed to a way of looking at the world and how things are ordered.

For a while now, we have a lot of antidotal information floating around out there and not enough hard data. I am not comfortable with the data, are you? Having said that, I think both sides want to save lives and get back to work. However, I ALSO believe there are some (a faction in America) who want to use this crisis to redefine the constitutional experience called America. Without being alarmist in my musings, I simply want to have “eyes wide open” to the potential of partisan politics and data manipulation that could have a negative and long-lasting impact on our great country! It’s an important approach to take when receiving expert data in unprecedented times that could change the way we legislate during times of crisis.

The Miracle of May

What happens during a national health scare when a majority of its citizenry believes in a secular worldview? What happens during a national health scare when a majority of its citizenry believes that they have the power to solve world hunger, world peace, water shortages, and even the Coronavirus pandemic? What happens during a national health scare when a majority of its government leaders have adopted secular reasoning and logic when formulating policy positions and crafting legislation? What happens during a national health scare when it is an election year and power is at stake?

What transpires is an environment of panic, fear, and decision-making that will have a long-term and detrimental impact on our society. It's called the law of unintended consequences. It could fundamentally change the pillars and foundations of the Constitution and the way that we govern IF we are not thoughtful, deliberate, and pragmatic in our decision-making.

I am calling on President Donald Trump to put together a detailed action plan to get folks back to work in May. I am calling it "The Miracle of May 2020" and the following guidance is what I would be giving our President.

1. President Trump declares May as a National Month of Prayer
 - a. He starts a prayer drive with religious leaders in our country to pray around the clock 24/7
 - b. He attends a May 3rd church service to kick off the month-long spiritual campaign of prayer

2. We phase ALL industry sectors back to work beginning in May with the following adjustments/modifications

a. Social distancing, hand washing, facemasks (where appropriate), and clean surfaces in the workplace to be maintained

b. Allow those who can work from home to continue to do so

c. Continue to isolate workplace “hot spots” around the country to minimize and mitigate negative health impacts

d. Where possible, allow extended hours of operation to scatter the workflow and number of employees in confined areas at the same time

e. Ask those who are at “high risk” (age, physical disabilities, and other health-related issues) to sit out until later in the year (TBD)

3. We retool American industry here at home with a supply chain that is not reliant on Chinese imports

a. Specific guidelines for pharmaceuticals and other healthcare necessities where an increased percentage must be manufactured in the USA

b. Specific guidelines for national defense-related commodities where an increased percentage must be manufactured in the USA

c. We immediately end all contracts that allow China to steal and/or benchmark our intellectual property

d. We demand reparations from China for the damage caused by the Coronavirus (if necessary, we freeze the available Chinese assets commensurate with the damage done to our economy)

4. President Trump gives guidance to our Governors to relax and roll back national emergency powers in May

a. Unwind the disastrous impact that the national emergency powers have had on our civil liberties

b. Noncompliance will result in (up to and including) a loss of state funding/grants/assistance

5. President Trump supports an infrastructure bill that would put unemployed American workers back to work building roads, bridges, and

other key infrastructure projects

a. Long-term unemployment insurance would be tied to “work requirements” in this proposed bill

6. We seal our borders from ALL illegal aliens

a. Increased military presence to maintain “zero tolerance”

7. President Trump gives guidance to allow public schools and universities to reopen in the fall of 2020

a. Social distancing, hand washing, facemasks (where appropriate), and clean surfaces in the public domain to be maintained

b. Allow those who can educate from home to continue to do so

c. Continue to isolate “hot spots” around the country to minimize and mitigate negative health impacts

d. Where possible, allow extended hours of operation to scatter the workflow and number of students/teachers in confined areas at the same time

e. Ask those who are at “high risk” (age, physical disabilities, and other health-related issues) to take additional precautions for study/teaching

We need to trust that the American people will do the right things to keep our state and our country safe. I am a free American, free from the long and intrusive arm of government. President Trump is walking a tightrope between a triumvirate of key components critical to our individual freedoms and I think that he is doing a masterful job.

1) Civil liberties and freedoms

2) American safety

3) Robust economy

The triumvirate of key components critical to our individual freedoms must move in unison toward a desired end. The desired end that I am referring to is upholding and protecting the Constitution of the United States of America. If we do that, then we solve for each of the conditions listed above. I believe that

my outline helps us move in that direction. It helps jump-start our economy (with the necessary safeguards), rolls back, and ends the State of Emergency declarations (choking our individual freedoms) while protecting the health and safety of all Americans (from the Coronavirus pandemic). Right now, we are seeing a battle like never before over the extremes in the three key components above. The extremes could do us great harm and further divide our country. Pragmatism and unity must rule the day! E Pluribus Unum! Out of many, one! Please pray for our state and our country.

The Vital Nature of Conservative Judges

Thank you, President Trump, for leaving us an enduring legacy with Supreme Court Justices who have a God-centered and/or moral worldview perspective. This article justifies the reasons for my approbation. Furthermore, by using the logic supplied in this article as a model of understanding, I believe that we can approach other aspects of our government with our eyes wide open!

Before I get into the underlying premise of this article, I would first like to lay down some key assumptions that are critical to our overall understanding of the need for conservative judges.

- Man has a sinful nature
- There are forces of both good and evil
- Secular Humanism is a religion (Supreme Court ruling relating to the Free Exercise Clause)
- The primary basis of all religion is to propagate their respective beliefs
- Virtue and morality are under attack in our country
- Christianity is under attack in our country
- A preponderance of our laws is taken from biblical precepts

The rational man (those living in an objective reality vs. those living in a subjective reality) has a hard time getting beyond these assumptions and points of historical fact. However, at a minimum, those who disagree would argue that we are simply “wrangling” over the “degree” of absolutism in the aforementioned list of assumptions. In other words, they would say that

while the evidence may or may not be all around us, it is simply a matter of applying our individual (relative or relativistic) perspectives. I would further clarify and narrow their position by saying that it is a matter of applying our individual worldview perspectives. That last statement leads me to the main premise, title, and body of this article.

As part of our exploration to establishing the vital nature of conservative judges, one must first answer two critical questions:

1. What role does worldview (the lens from which one views the world) play in the make-up of the courts along with the subsequent decisions, rulings, and opinions expressed?
2. Are legal opinions being shaped toward a higher standard of excellence (God-standards and faith-based standards) or are they being shaped toward a more secular orientation (Man-standards and secular humanist standards)? If so, who is doing the shaping and what are their respective worldview dispositions?

I contend that the battle for the heart, mind, and soul of constitutional integrity and adherence to the rule of law is engulfed and saturated with the answers to those questions above.

First, we must acknowledge the dichotomy in the assumptions. Our Founding Fathers purposefully created a document (our Constitution) that allowed for maximum tension (both positive and negative tension) between those with a secular religious orientation (no belief – so they say) and those with a more traditional Creator-God religious orientation. The former, a faith geared toward the ingenuity and god-like status of mankind. The latter, a faith geared toward a God and heavenly Father above. In other words, our Founders wanted to allow both the freedom to worship or not to worship as one's liberty of conscience would direct them. Second, our Founding Fathers wanted to restrain the excessive and extreme passions of those who may have wanted to establish a dominant and state-sponsored religion, while protecting the free exercise of religion from the long and tyrannical arm of an ever-present government. From a biblical perspective, God has given mankind free will (Armenian thinking) to either choose or not to choose a

particular spiritual course in life. Once again, the rational man must agree that the extremities of either end are not good for our country and our system of governance. Therefore, we must conclude that “forced obligation” to a particular religion (which includes the secular humanist religion) does not have grounds in either a biblical or constitutional framework.

However, that is not what we’ve experienced down through the ages and is not what we are currently experiencing in society today. There is forced obligation to the dictates of secularism and the associated tenets of their faith (doctrine). Just think about the repercussions for anyone who would be so bold as to practice (in full) their religious beliefs in a civil and/or government capacity. They would be taken to court and sued, made an example of, and/or censored in some way that would curtail their activity (or at least try to curtail their activity). In light of the above, how do these facts help us shape our understanding of the vital nature of conservative judges?

Main Premise

I believe that the makeup of our courts (relating to judges’ worldview perspectives) directly influences and motivates them when rendering legal decisions and opinions. To think that any judge can leave worldview perspective and understanding at the door in favor of a strict textual understanding of our Constitution is being naive. Judges simply become experts at shaping worldview narratives under the cover of legal precedence; using the power of legalese, prose, and command of the King’s English; along with the finesse, flair, and manipulation needed for a particular point of view. It happens on both sides of the political aisle. Yes, all judges ascribe to a political bent! Are there some documented exceptions to my premise in individual cases? Certainly. Does the totality of case law point to my conclusion? Overwhelmingly! We can see the tension referred to above, along with the shaping of narrative, exhibited in the last two-hundred and fifty years of case law.

For example, religious freedom was once a fairly simple concept, but now has turned into a futile exercise of matching intellect wit with legal and precedent-setting maneuvering, while trying to define what the meaning

of “is” is! Why not adhere to the original intent of our Constitution by not wanting to establish a state-sponsored church and letting everyone freely exercise their religious beliefs? In our Constitution, we already find very clear restrictions on the authority of government and any religious sect that would try to be the dominant state-sponsored religion. In our Constitution, we also find the clarity needed to freely exercise those beliefs without restriction. Simply put, “We render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar’s and unto God the things that are God’s.”

Furthermore, we see that a preponderance of our legal opinions and case law is being rendered on religious freedom (from the progressive left) using a litmus test with secular humanist leanings. No surprise there. In *Lemon vs. Kurtzman* (a.k.a. the Lemon litmus test), the decision was based on the following criteria:

- a. A law must have a secular purpose
- b. A law must have the “primary effect” that “neither advances nor inhibits religion”
- c. A law must not foster an “excessive entanglement” between government and religion

What I want to know is who is the secular humanist “genius” (pun fully intended) that created this nonsense? Where in the Constitution do you find these restrictions/requirements? Plain and simply spoken, “You don’t.” This is a way for the secular humanists among us (anti-God faction) to rule in such a manner that will create legal precedence “in their own image.” That litmus test moves us away from moral standing and the principles found in God’s Word- by design. It is not some arbitrary ruling from some judge who is trying to use a textual understanding of the law. That would be complete and utter nonsense and naivety.

At the same time, we see Congress (We the People) trying to codify our own litmus test (in support of religious freedom) into the jurisprudence and subsequent adjudication of cases brought before the courts. The Religious Freedom Restoration Act of 1993 (RFRA) was intended to confirm (by enacting legislation) that ALL federal, state, and local laws support

our inalienable right of religious freedom incorporated in the Fourteenth Amendment. Here is the outline of what Congress announced and passed:

1. The framers of the Constitution, recognizing free exercise of religion as an inalienable right, secured its protection in the First Amendment to the Constitution;
2. laws “neutral” toward religion may burden religious exercise as surely as laws intended to interfere with religious exercise;
3. Governments should not substantially burden religious exercise without compelling justification;
4. in *Employment Division vs. Smith* the Supreme Court virtually eliminated the requirement that the government justify burdens on religious exercise imposed by laws neutral toward religion; and
5. the compelling interest test as outlined in prior Federal court rulings is a workable test for striking sensible balances between religious liberty and competing for prior governmental interests.

The express purpose of the RFRA Act is as follows:

1. to restore the compelling interest test as outlined in *Sherbert v. Verner* and *Wisconsin v. Yoder*, and to guarantee its application in all cases where free exercise of religion is substantially burdened; and
2. to provide a claim or defense to persons whose religious exercise is substantially burdened by the government.

(*Religion and Constitution – McConnell, Garvey, Berg, Third Edition, 2001*)

What the readers of this article might find especially interesting is how a Supreme Court Justice with a progressive leftist worldview and leanings (Kennedy) justified the majority opinion of the Supreme Court. At one point in his opinion, Justice Kennedy noted the difference between racial discrimination and religious discrimination in the following terms, “The appropriateness of remedial measures must be considered in light of the evil presented.”

Okay Justice Kennedy, let me get this straight. Are you arguing that racial

discrimination (by its very nature) is eviler in degree than that of religious discrimination? It seems to me that you are “messaging” the importance you place on religious freedom and tolerance as compared to other individual and unalienable rights we hold so dear. Either way, you should have emphatically denounced the evil in both and should have not let your secular humanist worldview rear its ugly head with the mismanagement of words.

In conclusion, we must use every possible means (within the confines of the law) to confirm judges/justices who have a conservative worldview perspective. Quite frankly, I would be a proponent of confirming judges/justices who have a Christian leadership worldview perspective (with appropriate experience and credentials). If you believe the Bible when it says that we ought to obey God rather than men, one can only conclude that judges with a God-centered and/or moral orientation will be better suited to slow down the moral and spiritual erosion in our country, if nominated. If we are to be the salt (preserving agent) and light (luminescence) demanded of us by God, people of the Christian faith must be willing to recommend and confirm those judges/justices who walk by faith and not by sight. One man said, “We must remember that absolute truth is the proper and sufficient antagonist to error.”

Big Media Baiting the Masses

The CNN organization is pure and unadulterated EVIL. They run false narratives at will and it disgusts me to the very core of my being. Christians and those with a moral consciousness must be aware that evil is among us and has spread its ugly wings to the point where mainstream media is now inciting violence and tempting (baiting) us to engage.

We must not take the bait! Violence is NOT the remedy that our country needs. If those extreme elements in our society either knowingly or unwittingly take the bait, there will be devastating consequences to our Constitutional Republic like no other time in our history. Lives will be lost, dreams shattered, and any potential for Christian principles and/or moral standing in our public policy will be gone forever. There is no alarmism in my pronouncements, only an in-depth, factual, and objective view of the political “goings-on” across our great nation.

If we allow big media to bait the masses toward violence and other unlawful activity; and allow them to provoke the extreme elements in the patriot movement to participate in violent means, the democrat socialists (small caps on purpose) will use this as an excuse to institute Martial law and invoke the Insurrection Act. In other words, any perception by the left of mass violence will be used as cover to button down the hatches and control us. Please do not take the bait from those who support a marxist orientation toward a “community” and “equal wealth” approach to governance. Don’t you see that many conservatives are getting played right now by the media when they stir the emotions with provocation? If we let them play us, they win. Matthew Henry made several astounding and insightful statements in his commentary

that support the direction we must take:

“Men of temperance and charity are justly had in reputation, for checking the incendiaries that otherwise would set the world on fire.”

“Those that are bent to mischief cannot be reconciled to those who make it their business to do good.”

Are we men and women of temperance and charity that will purpose to do good and not evil? We must use all nonviolent means available within the confines of the rule of law to win our fight. This MUST be our united pathway forward. Please do not misunderstand my resolve, I am not suggesting for a minute that we remain silent and inactive. No! Am I incensed? Yes! Will I cave to the incendiary ploys and provocation of mankind (big news media)? No! We should march, protest, rally, and use any/all forms of civil disobedience given to us by our Constitution and the rule of law. If executed correctly, our actions will stifle any/all progressive liberal and anti-God pieces of legislation and see them come to a grinding halt.

However, before we proceed, I also believe that we should level-set the societal and political conditions that have brought us to this point. Without the necessary context, it is impossible to appreciate how the mainstream media could ever reach this level of editorializing, indoctrination (propaganda), and ineptitude. The short answer is to lament about big media’s secular humanist and anti-God worldviews. The long answer is to painstakingly identify the key factors from our birth as a nation that have brought us to this point and juxtapose them against the depravity we are now experiencing in our nation. Let’s first look at the conditions leading up to our founding and the sacred documents created (U.S. Constitution and the Declaration of Independence).

Conditions then:

1. The Great Awakening – Jonathan Edward’s sermon, “Sinners in the Hands of An Angry God”, helped changed the spiritual and political landscape

in America. In a sense, it had the impact of “democratizing” the hierarchy of religion. It allowed us once again to reflect on Martin Luther’s Protestant Reformation where man had a direct responsibility to his Creator, outside of the dominant entanglements of a state-sponsored church or the authority structure of religious organizations.

2. Enlightenment Thinking – John Locke inspired enlightenment thinking that further expressed the opinion that man had unalienable rights given him from his Divine Creator-God that allowed him to practice his/her faith (or not practice) with the liberty of conscience guaranteed from above. It was inspiring equality of the masses in a spiritual sense that blended the tenets of Martin Luther with the political zeal of individual freedom expressed in seventeenth and eighteen century America.

3. British Oppression – To say that the oppression and dominance of the British had much impact on the spiritual and political conditions of America would be an understatement. Remember Samuel Adam’s cry, “There is no king but King Jesus?” How about the cry, “no taxation without representation?” Our history books are full of the oppressive factors coming from the colonial power of Britain. Can anyone say Boston Tea party?

4. Indian Uprisings – People back then were fearful for their lives. The colonists faced ongoing Indian uprisings and attacks that put the fear of God in them.

5. Death and Disease – The mortality rate from various diseases and common afflictions were high. Life expectancy was low. One learned to live every moment of every day like it was their last.

6. Shaping a New Government – There was an excitement in the air! We were trying to establish a form of government never before tried and the colonists wanted to be a part of history. While there were wide and varied opinions on how to get there, one thing was certain, a majority of Americans were unified in their question for the right of self-government. We did not need or want an unwelcome intruder on our shores.

Taken individually, each of these conditions could stir the masses and create untold enthusiasm all on their own. Taken as a whole, I believe these historical

events jettisoned any sense of self-focus, defeatism, or complacency toward a more united America. In other words, these six primary and material events help shape a zeal toward a love of country and a love of God that produced our Constitution. There was unrivaled patriotism, enthusiasm, and a spirit of unity that helped shape a nation in its infancy. Yes, these events were the ties that bound our hearts in Christian love, one for another. It is also a fact that the American colonies at this time were propagated with citizens almost entirely by adherence to the various strains of the Protestant religion. For the most part, Protestantism was in harmony with the moral codes and mores supporting the larger society. We unequivocally had a Christian consensus on our shores.

As a result of the overwhelming influence of the Protestant religion and its impact, our Founding Fathers had the difficult and unenviable task of writing a Constitution that provided freedom and liberty for ALL peoples and their corresponding beliefs/faiths without partiality.

Conditions Now:

1. The Secularization of Society – Our country has progressively moved away from conditions of our Christian faith and morality and toward the conditions of the secular humanist (small caps on purpose) faith and immorality. We no longer have a Christian consensus that is willing to fight for the goodness of America, but instead many Americans turn their backs and run to a more accommodating and tolerant existence at the expense of morality and virtue. It is no surprise then, that for the purposes of the free exercise of religion, the Supreme Court of the United States ruled that secular humanism is a religion. They get tax-exempt status and conscientious objector status. Unfortunately, if you overlay the basic tenets of the secular humanist religion and their manifestos (I, II, III) with that of the Communist Manifesto, you will find that their basic aims are the same. Indoctrination, intimidation, control, and brute force are at their disposal to espouse, dispense, and enforce a collectivist mindset and marxist orientation. One is a religious transcript to manipulate and control the masses, while the other is a political ideology bent on accomplishing the same thing. The first

is used in the public sphere to educate, shape, and control the doctrine of their faith. The latter is used in the political realm to shape, and control, and manipulate public policy. They work in tandem.

2. Identity Politics – We have moved away from a traditional understanding of freedom of conscience that united the masses and was articulated by John Locke, to an identity politics approach that divides our country and helps foster the political agendas of those only focused on the specific negative impacts of their disenfranchised group. In other words, they lament that America is bad, racist, and full of white extremists and the only way that they can be made whole is to give them a bunch of money. Then what? They will want a bunch more money! An “Eyore-ian” (remember Winnie the Pooh) perspective to be sure. Woe is me.

3. Domestic Enemies – We are no longer are under the tutelage of a colonial oppressor in Great Britain. Instead, we have domestic enemies at home trying to destroy the foundational elements of our country from the inside-out. We see it all around us. The socialists are on our shores in plain view and are attacking us.

4. Political Uprisings - Black Lives Matter, Antifa, marxist-leninist propagandists, lgbtq, and others who support the radical notion of critical race theory and the 1619 Project want to “get them some.” It is an outrage to the moral and principled men who crafted our Constitution. These insurrectionists are trying to decimate our governing documents. Were our Founding Fathers perfect? No. Did they have a God-consciousness and want to create a lasting and guiding document that was equal for all, but amendable to the errors of our way? Yes! Did they create a document that was slow-moving and steady that controlled both the baser instincts of mankind and the emotions of the excited majority? Yes!

5. Prosperity and Health – We are one of the most prosperous countries in the world with one of the highest standards of living on a per capita basis ever recorded. Unfortunately, that prosperity has moved us to become complacent with our prosperity (taking things for granted); ignorant to the need of staying informed; immobilized by the need for entertainment and recreation; and lackadaisical to getting involved in the “tough work” of moving our country

forward by leading out front. Cotton Mather said it best, “Religion brought forth prosperity, and the daughter destroyed the mother.”

6. Tearing Down Our Existing Government – The fringe and extreme elements in our government want to remake her in the image of Nicaragua, Cuba, Venezuela, and other socialist dictatorships. They want to reshape the original intent of our Constitution to the extent necessary that it blends with current cultural conditions. They want a living and breathing and elastic view of our constitution so they can “effectively” operate outside of its parameters. It will become nothing more than a wall ornament that acquiesces to the whims of the administrative deep state and other unelected regulatory bodies.

Based on the progressive nature of radical change our country has seen in the last 250 plus years (and light speed in the last 20), it is now understandable how big media plays such a defining role in overseeing the false narrative of the left. They are the left and they are the enemy. Please do not let the big media arm of the democrat socialists propagandize you. Please do not let them incite you toward violent means of resistance. Let the means of “resistance” be seasoned with the substance of God’s Word.

We must diligently search the scriptures for our answers.

Will you rise to the occasion?

Ram & Jam Politics

If anyone thinks that we have any hint or semblance of collegiality in either branch of Congress right now, I would encourage you to get caught up on the facts. Any true Republican party loyalist (conservative) who is an elected official to either body of Congress must understand their responsibility to draw a line in the sand and fight for our party's platform and the corresponding principles. While no reasonable citizen wants our Constitutional Republic to cease functioning or to see violence in our streets, most of us are appalled at the mass manipulation and fraudulent activity in our system of elections that have upended our Constitution and the very essence of our founding principles. Most of us want IMMEDIATE CHANGE to the processes of government that are broken and those court decisions, legislative initiatives, and executive orders that are geared toward chipping away at the original intent of our guiding documents and rule of law. The nature of the "great divide" in the political arena in America right now is extensive and about to get worse with the ram and jam politics soon to commence. What is my premise one may ask? They are setting the stage as we speak.

With control of the Presidency, a majority in the U.S. House, and an "effective" majority in the U.S. Senate (along with quasi-Republicans Lindsey Graham, Mitt Romney, Susan Collins, and others), based on the ability of the Vice President to cast a deciding vote in the Senate, the democrats are poised to make a change from a Constitutional Republic form of government to one that wreaks of a socialist dictatorship (purporting much marxist ideology). Make no mistake, if we sit idly by (*Qui tacet consentire videtur* – he who is silent is taken to agree) and let this happen- capitalism will be gone, our

Constitution will have been coopted, our Bill of Rights usurped, and the very spirit of states' rights eliminated in full.

First, I can't express enough the importance of keeping the administration of our election laws at the state level based on Article II Section I Paragraph II of the Constitution.

"Each state shall appoint, in such manner as the legislature thereof may direct"

Remember, politicians can only get their power from their citizens. The power that citizens give to them is only done through the ballot box. Control the ballot box (our election processes), and you control (dominate) the masses. Federalizing our election laws is not the answer. Any initiative taking away the constitutional authority given to our state legislatures to make and modify election laws is a "power grab" by the marxist elements on our shores that will cripple our Republic, regardless of the justification. Codifying lawless, immoral, manipulative, and fraudulent behavior into legislation that federalizes our election laws violates our Constitution. Likewise, any backdoor attempt that effectively accomplishes the same objective should be stopped dead in its tracks and struck down immediately. Believe me, there will be alternative forms of manipulation toward this end. The 10th Amendment clearly gives all powers not designated to the federal government back to the state level.

"The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the states, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people."

It doesn't get any clearer than that. In the last election cycle, we had a purposeful and successful attempt at circumventing the laws of our land under the guise of health concerns.

Secondly, and to make matters worse, if the marxist element on our shores is successful in initiating the nuclear option to curb debate (killing the filibuster)

in the U.S. Senate while changing all the U.S. House procedural ground rules for open discussion, debate, recommending alternative amendments to legislation, and limitless budgeting and funding (elimination of the PAYGO rule), it will have devastating consequences.

PAYGO is a budget rule requiring that tax cuts and mandatory spending increases must be offset somewhere else to limit out-of-control spending. Not only do these rule changes limit open discussion and debate, but will open the door to all their Green New Deal initiatives and derivative forms of marxist ideology that will have the impact of silencing the minority voices in Congress. We the People will no longer have a voice. It will be the era of “ram and jam” politics reflected in the FDR administrations (but worse) of yesteryear. Citizens of the United States of America, we have a major problem!

In conclusion, I would encourage all Republicans and those who are prone to wander to the left and straddle the fence on policy decisions to stay at home and fight for our conservative principles. Now is not the time to cozy up to the enemy. Now is the time to heed the advice of our Founders and make sure that our government is a slow-moving body!

An Open Letter to Preachers Across America

Let Christ (100% man and 100% God) be our example of someone who walked the face of this earth and “disrupted” the conventional thinking (secularism), spiritual thinking (traditionalism), and the corresponding practices (legalism) of that time in both the private and public sectors of influence. Yes, Jesus Christ, our Lord was/is the epitome of being the ultimate change agent, disrupter, and purveyor of peace using righteous instruction and admonishment that can change the hearts, minds, and souls of mankind (and a nation). His methods are perfect and always right because they focus on the inward conditions and righteous motivations of the heart vs. the lofty, high-minded, and intellectual thinking after the tradition of men.

In the course of recent public events and civil unrest, we must once again diligently search the scriptures to find the wisdom needed to guide our approach. It will take an “uncanny” level of discernment and wisdom to help us navigate through these difficult times. The level of discernment and wisdom I am talking about can only be attributed to our Divine Maker and Author, Jesus Christ.

We must first start with Chapter 13 in the Book of Romans where God gives us the following instruction and admonition:

- Every soul should be subject to the higher powers (governmental authority).

- It is God himself who places rulers in those positions of authority with Divine ordination.
- They (citizens and those in subjection) that resist that authority shall receive damnation to themselves.

God then lays down the conditions for his instructions to both rulers and citizens alike.

- Rulers are not supposed to be terrors to those who do good works, but to those who do evil. Therefore, it is my opinion that the inherent understanding is that the laws established by our rulers (who are ordained of God) and those that enforce them will punish evil and not punish good works. Correspondingly, the same logic holds that if rulers are to punish evil, they would NOT be allowed to create, enforce, or condone laws of an evil nature.
- Therefore, if citizens ARE doing evil and not good works relative to their subjection to the rulers and their corresponding mandates (who have higher powers ordained of God), EXPECT to be punished.
- Rulers who are ministers of God are also accountable (beareth not the sword in vain) and are expected to carry out their duty to execute wrath upon the person that does evil.

In other words, in absolute terms, God expects both rulers (ordained of God) and citizens by way of enforcement and adherence, respectively, to support good and to resist evil or suffer the consequences. It is also my opinion that the logic that Christ portrays for citizens should be extended to the ruling elite as well. Because of God's nature (holy and righteous), he would never condone the presence and actions of an evil authority who espouses and executes evil laws. Furthermore, Christ instructs us that once the righteous conditions of good works are met and enforced, we are to render therefore to all their dues, tributes, and customs (authority, taxation, and customary proceedings in matters of governance) with the necessary fear and/or honor commensurate with their God-given ordination as rulers.

In another portion of scripture (Matthew 22:21) Christ instructs us to “render therefore unto Caesar the things (plural) which are Caesar’s and unto God the things that are God’s.” It is my opinion that we should NEVER let the conditions of humanity who espouse secular thinking and lawmaking, much of which is anti-God in nature, (Caesar’s opposition to good works) to overpower and render null and void the absolute truth found in God’s Word. Based on God’s Word, I believe that there is a clear limit to Caesar’s scope of power and influence (or any ruling power with unbridled authority to destroy good works and support evil).

Understanding that we have distinct responsibilities in both the ecclesiastical and political realms here on earth that are complimentary and contributory to our spiritual well-being and moral consciousness, how do we restore an allegiance and practicability to both the good works and righteous nature described in God’s Word? How do we react as Christian citizens to the forces of evil who would undermine the instruction given by Christ in the above verses? How should we respond to those in positions of authority who carry out laws and recommend laws that go against the nature of God’s Word and His instruction?

In the words of the Apostle Peter, “We ought to obey God rather than men”. However, beyond mere words of outrage, expressions of righteous indication, and an intellectual understanding that we obey God rather than men, I believe that there must be action to our resolve. I believe that when you obey God rather than men that you are practicing a form of civil disobedience.

What does this civil disobedience look like? Can we not once again look to the Bible and the book of Proverbs for the beginning stages of our answer and response to current societal conditions?

I went by the field of the slothful, and by the vineyard of the man void of understanding; And, lo, it was all grown over with thorns, and nettles had covered the face thereof, and the stone wall thereof was broken down. Then I saw, and considered it well: I looked upon it and received instruction. (Proverbs 24:30-32)

The analogy of the field to our current state of governance is palpable. As a country, we have been negligent in securing the walls and anchors of our freedom. Our government is all grown over with the thorns and nettles by the hand of anti-God and secular thinking and we have sat idly by and done nothing. We have allowed the man of the vineyard who is void of understanding to leave our country in such a state of disrepair that it is unrecognizable.

Are we now seeing the depths and magnitude of disrepair to our nation and are we “considering it well?” Are we studying the scriptures with such absolute ferocity to make ready a plan to restore the vineyard of governance and religious freedom? Are we taking notice of the vineyard of governance and religious freedom with resolve and instruction that moves us to action? Once again, I believe that we can look to Christ’s example to answer those questions.

And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick. (Matthew 14:14)

We serve an action-oriented Saviour who cares about his flock. In the first part of this verse, you see that Christ went forth. He is showing us the pathway forward through action. Secondly, as a result of his movement forward, he was able to see the great multitude and their needs. Thirdly, his vision of the multitude moved him with compassion toward them. Lastly, He healed their sick (forward action, heavenly vision, Godly compassion, and divine healing).

What can we learn from this verse relating to the current civil unrest that we are experiencing? How do preachers across America stir their congregations to embrace their responsibilities as citizens by getting involved in the issues of governance, understanding the magnitude of the situation, being moved and stirred with the obstinacy of conscience, and taking the action necessary to deliver our country from the grips of the secular humanist religion?

For this very reason, I wrote a compelling argument on how to move our country forward in the 4th book that I published titled, “A Covenant.” The subtitle of the book is “Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation.”

While I do not think that God has made an extra-biblical covenant with America for the right of existence and prosperity, I do believe that a sovereign God has allowed the United States of America to write the constitutional framework that supports the principles of the Christian faith and the necessities of a morally functioning government. That is the covenant for which I speak.

In conclusion, the spiritual warfare that we are currently waging is a result (in part) from all of the extra-constitutional rulings on religious freedom that are simply scholarly accretions that do much to twist the original intent of our Founding Fathers' vision. These rulings have led us toward a more secular orientation. In other words, we have allowed the high and lofty thinking of mankind to crowd out the thinking of the more principled men (true visionaries) of yesteryear. The legislative issuances and opinions (extra-constitutional) of the progressive left and anti-God faction of America chips away at the very foundation of our country, impacting the moral values and religious standards that make America great and envied as that "shining city on a hill." For us to solve our national crisis we must have a heavenly vision, we must take appropriate and deliberate action, we must have compassion and the depth of Godly wisdom needed, we rely on Divine intervention and healing, and we offer up the fervent prayer of our hearts.

Is Mr. Smith Going to Washington...Again?

One of my all-time favorite movies is “Mr. Smith Goes to Washington”, starring Jimmy Stewart. It is a classic that so aptly captures the essence of political opportunism, graft, and corruption in the bowels (excrement) of our system of government. This film has all of the elements to move and stir the soul in a political context. We have the protagonist- Mr. Smith, the antagonist- Senator Paine, and a whole host of establishment politicians, kingmakers, and their surrogates, and other government officials chained to the abuse and excesses of political power. Unfortunately, most of the elected officials portrayed in the movie were caught up in the institutional controls and deep state thinking (drinking the Kool-Aid) that overrode any righteous desire for true public service. It allows us to view the seat of absolute power and tyranny from the confines of our own living rooms. In a sense, the movie was a portrayal of deep-rooted corruption that has no limits or bounds EXCEPT that some righteous and wholesome “new-comer” arrives on the scene and says, “enough is enough.”

There is one specific aspect of this movie that I believe we should pay special attention to. Once the excitement and idealism of public service to our country as an appointed U.S. Senator wore off, Mr. Smith’s primary mission became exposing the corruption on Capitol Hill while exonerating himself from the wildest of wild unlawful claims and accusations. He had an epiphany (blindsided) based on the reality of events. Yes, even in the movies of yesterday, the reality of “doing the right thing” is often met with aggregate

exposure from the forces of evil. I believe that we see this same nefarious plot being played out by the democrat socialists and “left of center” Republicans on our shores. Right now, we have God-fearing patriot Senators (Josh Hawley, Ted Cruz, and others) and those in the U.S. House of Representatives who are standing up and saying “enough is enough” to bring direct and immediate attention to the issue of voter fraud and election integrity in the November 3rd election cycle of 2020. Like Mr. Smith, these conservative patriots of both the upper and lower chambers of Congress are also being vilified by the mainstream press and those elected officials who want to preserve the status quo.

However, beyond the obvious ties in the movie to our current form of government (graft, corruption, lies, and fraud) lays a parliamentary and procedural element that must be recognized. Yes, one man/woman can control the floor of their respective chamber as long as he/she is physically able to stand, and FILIBUSTER proposed legislation. Please do not let this go unnoticed by you! It may save our Christian nation and Constitutional Republic!

Wikipedia says that a filibuster is a political procedure where one or more members of parliament or congress debate over a proposed piece of legislation to delay or entirely prevent a decision being made on the proposal. Many call the filibuster the “soul” of the Senate.

The only thing that could disrupt the impact of a filibuster is if the controlling party (chair) changes the rules to stop debate (nuclear option) from the usual 60 votes in the Senate (60 out of 100) to a simple majority (51 out of 100). Other than that, it is a way for the minority party to still have an impact and change/stop bad legislation that is harmful to our country.

In summary, I would encourage ALL Americans to dust off or purchase the movie Mr. Smith Goes to Washington. It has all of the political intrigue, behind-the-scenes impact of political machines, and depiction of the reality of our politics. Fortunately, it also tells the story of how one good man or woman can effect change and impact a nation! It’s fili-bust-er or bust!

What do We do Now?

As Christians we have a fine line to walk. We need to embody our Christian distinctiveness and testimonies while pressing forward to expose the illegal practices of the last election. We do this through all legal means with Christ-like intentions. We protest, march, speak out, and explore all avenues of civil disobedience that are nonviolent, respectful, and within the confines of the rule of law. The world may tell us that we have a separation of church and state. I wholeheartedly disagree. Like C.S. Lewis, I believe that my politics are informed by the totality of my faith. We have a mandate in God's Word to be leaders in society both in the private and public sectors!

- Occupy till he comes
- Redeeming the times
- Stewardship responsibilities
- Ambassadorship responsibilities
- Dominion responsibilities
- Salt and light responsibilities

Violence should have no place in our attempt to overthrow the chains of oppression in our system of elections. We cannot let the fringe elements who support violent means hijack our righteous cause. Mass civil disobedience on a broad scale that is peaceful will FORCE our politicians to investigate and then author legislation that protects election integrity. Secondly, we institute a nationwide effort and continue to write, call, and interact with politicians

at both the state and federal levels to express our outrage. Lastly, we use the vote to unseat those professional political operatives who are satisfied with unconstitutional changes to election law just before an election and those who want us to “move on” and accept the illegal nonsense. No, we are not moving on. We want change and we want it now.

If you are interested in my specific national recovery plan, please go to [amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com) and order my 4th book, titled... “A Covenant”... subtitle... Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation by Michael J. LaPierre.

Decertification of Electorates

I have been asked by many who voted for me in the South Carolina Republican Primary for U.S. Senate to convey my opinion on objecting to the Electoral College certification. I will do this with an open letter to the U.S. Senators across America.

Dear Senators,

Each of you stands at the precipice of a historical vote that will have lasting consequences for the future of our Christian Republic. Our Founding Fathers crafted a document that balanced the need for representative government, the rule of law, a balance of powers, and a definite and specific “We the People” orientation through our Bill of Rights. They, too, understood the baser instincts of mankind (Adamic sin nature) and the need for some to use lawlessness, brute force, and other forms of oppression/manipulation to control the masses and secure absolute power. They accomplish this by institutional overreach, judicial activism, establishment politics, election law violation, and a blatant disregard for our Constitution.

The spirit and original intent of our U.S. Constitution is a document for the ages and one that will never again be equaled. At its core, the Constitution is a contract between its citizens and those they elect to represent them in matters of governance with the specificity needed for endurance over time. The process of checks and balances laid out in our Constitution along with the “We the People” orientation (representative government) has ensured its survival. Make no mistake, our Constitution was written with original intent the same way our Bible was written with original intent. While I am

NOT suggesting our Constitution is on par with the Word of God in any shape, form, or fashion, what I am suggesting is that they were both written as a guide and a light to help us in times of crisis and to see us through to the end. One, inspired and God-breathed, the other, written by the hand of man with an eye toward heaven above. I believe that a sovereign God has his fingerprints on both, but for different spiritual purposes, functionality, and will.

It is because of my last statement that I believe that the anti-God faction of America is trying to erase all connectivity to either of these magnificent works of Divine Providence. The secular humanist and anti-God faction of America realize that is impossible to nullify the original intent and spirit of each document. The Spirit of God encapsulates each and that cannot be changed by the whims of mankind. However, the authors of confusion will work overtime to make sure that our citizenry perceives the documents in ways not fitting or in alignment with the original meaning and intent. Let me explain.

If the secular humanist crowd is successful in modifying the way that the underlining pillars (one such pillar is the rule of law i.e., election laws) that support the Constitution are perceived, they will have achieved their desired ends in nullifying its impact and purpose. In other words, if they are successful in making enough exceptions to the original intent through legislation, court decisions, executive orders, election law changes, and administrative deep state rulings, our Constitution will become a living and breathing document with the elasticity necessary to fit the Constitution to the culture.

Dear Senators, that is the progressive liberals end game! Let me give you an example. I believe that the Separation of Church and State issue is the poster child for my position. Many Americans have been “conned” (indoctrinated) into believing that the above phraseology (Separation of Church and State) is in the Constitution. Much of our case law and legislation on the establishment and separation clauses have been created from a manipulated position to take God out of our government. Unfortunately, many Americans now perceive our Constitution in an ill-gotten manner that does not support the original intent.

Our Founding Fathers NEVER had this approach in mind. I can say that with an unequivocal and resounding, never because our Founders anticipated changes would be needed through the process of amendments. They understood that change would happen and devised a way forward that was deliberate and slow-moving. Antonin Scalia had it correct. We must never mess with the original intent of our constitutional bylaws. Haphazardly fitting the Constitution to the culture by manipulating its foundational elements would have been an anathema to them. What are those underlining and structural components (pillars) that protect the enduring legacy of our Constitution?

- Life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness (property)
- Freedom of Religion
- Limited Government
- Rule of Law
- 2nd Amendment Gun Rights
- Free Speech
- Freedom of the Press
- Freedom to Assemble
- Freedom to Partition
- Due Process
- Privacy Rights
- States' Rights

If the progressive left (anti-God) and “left of center” Republicans can chip away at the foundational elements of our Constitution unrestrained, they will devise a system of government not commissioned by our Founders or We the People. It will have the “effect” of allowing matters of governance to be conducted while ignoring the original intent of our Constitution. We see the impact of this unholy and manipulative approach all around us. Their strategy is to make the waters so muddy through excessive regulation, control, administrative state rulings, and deep state operatives running amuck that they can circumvent the original intent of our founding documents.

Conservatives must fight these anti-American and anti-God activities at every turn to assure our long-term survival as a nation.

As a Christian citizen and public servant of South Carolina, I am imploring you to reconsider your respective positions on objecting to the Electoral College certification. There has been gross negligence, lawlessness, manipulation, fraud, and a long list of documented acts (treasonous) during the presidential election process that must be investigated before any certification taking place. The allegations are rampant. We the People of South Carolina are demanding an investigation into the egregious and unconstitutional violation of our election laws. Allowing states to change election laws so close to an election is unconstitutional, at best. In the worst light, collusion may have taken place among the several states to manipulate an election and exacerbate the conditions for voter fraud. This must not stand. If we do let this stand, it will be playing right into the hands of the secularist mentioned above.

In the United States of America, we have the political and societal forces of both good and evil. Likewise, in South Carolina, we see those same political and societal constructs at work. The former supports the rule of law and conformity to the bylaws of the Constitution of the United States of America. The latter uses the means of nonconformity, lawlessness, and confusion to upend our allegiance to the sacred principles found in the Constitution. If we allow this election to stand before the 10-day “emergency investigation” that Senator Cruz and others have recommended, we will be doing both our state and our country a great disservice.

Our government is a Constitutional Republic that was founded on Christian principles. This does not mean that we establish a Christian theocracy by any stretch of the imagination. It simply means that the principles of Christianity envelop the original intent of our entire system of government. Many of those same principles are universal to other beliefs and those with moral judgment and standing. This is an undisputed fact no matter how hard the secularists try to erase all vestiges of the Christian element on our shores.

My question is this, “Will you allow the Christian principles that produce the rule of law and truth to prevail or will you allow anti-God principles that produce bondage and subservience to big government and the administrative

DECERTIFICATION OF ELECTORATES

deep state to prevail?”

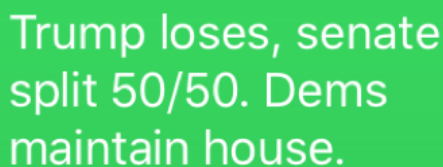
The choice is yours. We the People of South Carolina will closely monitor your position on this sentinel issue. We have an obstinacy of conscience that will not be satisfied until there is a complete and thorough investigation into the extent and dynamics of voter fraud in the election.

I am asking you to vote with conservative U.S. Senators and U.S. House of Representative members who want to protect our Constitution. Like most South Carolinians, they too, want an immediate investigation and will object to the Electoral College certification.

A Most Unfortunate Prediction

On November 3rd, 2020, at 5:11 PM (election day), I predicted the outcome of the races for the U.S. Presidency, U.S. Senate, and the U.S. House of Representatives. The prediction below was NOT a prediction that I hoped would materialize. President Donald Trump has been one of the most productive presidents in U.S. history.

Tue, Nov 3, 5:11 PM



Trump loses, senate split 50/50. Dems maintain house.

For months and weeks leading up to the election, President Trump warned us time and again that the conditions were ripe for voter fraud on a scale never before seen in the United States of America. President Trump and his team of advisors lamented ad nauseum about the election law changes going on under the guise of Covid-19 health concerns and other alarming modifications to overall election integrity. I listened intently to the administration's warnings and shared/share their concerns on election manipulation and the lack of integrity i.e., legitimacy. Mail-in ballots, absentee ballots, election law changes, et al., and a host of other measures that were deemed "reasonable

accommodations” to the circumstances surrounding the health scare were rationalized and subsequently justified by the democrat socialists and liberal media as fair game. On its face, one could almost be enticed by the sincerity of the offering. Keeping people out of harm’s way to avoid additional spreading of the virus seems like an honorable thing to do, correct? Wait a minute, not so fast.

First of all, I believe that we should document some assumptions and concerns that must be objectively debated and discussed before buying into the “bleeding heart” position of public safety. When put in the proper context, the motives for all of the changes become very muddy indeed. Let us now explore how the politicization of Covid-19 opened the door for election law changes and other allowances (accommodations) that impacted the results. The degree and scale to which the below (irregularities, accommodations, concerns, biases, and unlawful practices) have impacted the results are still in question. However, at the very least, it calls into doubt the legitimacy of the election and what we plan to do moving forward. The fact that there was some degree of lawless activity is NOT in question by anyone, it is simply the degree to which it occurred.

1. Never let a crisis go to waste – This mantra is the predominant rallying cry for the democrat socialists who would prefer to use manipulated tactics and demagoguery to finesse the American voter, compared to a principled orientation to abating a crisis. In other words, why solve a problem when you can use it for political advantage and opportunism?

2. Judicial activism and legislative avoidance – For me, this is where the rubber meets the road. This is the elephant in the room that is EXTREMELY PROBLEMATIC for our system of government. This is an egregious violation of the foundational element (our voting rights) of our Christian Republic. If we no longer follow the Constitution and the rule of law that it demands, our system of government will not stand in the long-term. Article II Section I of the Constitution is clear. It is the authority and jurisdiction of the state legislatures to enact and modify our election laws, and not that of the court

system, administrative state, or other government officials. In 1992 the democrat strategist James Carville coined a phrase, “The economy, stupid.” Thus, signifying that a sound economy was key to an election. Let me modify his phrase by shouting, “The legislature, stupid.” Thus, signifying that the authority given to the legislatures of each state to make election laws written in our U.S. Constitution is the key to this election integrity debate. What was the impact on results?

3. Purging voter registration rolls – Why would the democrat socialists want to purge voter rolls when they can use them to cheat? Allowing dead people to vote, allowing multiple votes by the same person in different states, and other forms of fraud all emanate from poorly maintained and out-of-date voter registration rolls. What was the impact on results?

4. Failure to authenticate – During the tabulation of votes, most states have an inbound ballot process that verifies and authenticates the batching of counted votes. Why was there so much leeway given in this election (lack of accountability) on proper authentication and what was the impact on results?

5. Limited visibility and concurrence – The ability for opposing political parties to view the election process must be in place. Access was denied in a multiplicity of states for Republican watchdogs. What was the impact on results?

6. Voter identification – Are you kidding me? We let people vote without voter identification. This is on par with illegal immigration. This must be changed. What was the impact on results?

7. Media bias – Media bias and censorship have reached unimaginable heights. I think the democrat socialists want to bring back John Adams’s Alien and Sedition Act to control the free speech of American citizens. What was the impact on results?

8. Technology implications – Some have claimed that our election technology was breached and/or manipulated in a manner that favors one candidate over another. We need an investigation into these accusations. What was the impact on results?

9. Harvesting and collecting ballots – Allowing a 3rd party the right to collect the ballots of others opens the door to voter fraud and questions of voter integrity. This practice should be outlawed immediately. What was the impact on results?

10. Others – I am sure that there are many other forms of voter fraud out there. What was the impact on results?

11. Avoidance of conflict – One of the unfortunate storylines of getting to the bottom of the truth is to watch both democrat socialists and establishment Republicans rail on the rights of its elected officials to object to the certification of the Electoral College. They want it to quickly “go away” because they realize that our election laws and system of voting are broken. It has brought to light just how fragile our federal government truly is and want to protect their power and authority at all costs. The establishment wants to “move on” for the sake of unity and protecting our form of government without doing the hard work of election law and election process oversight.

In conclusion, it saddened me to predict failure for a president that I support and one who had such enormous success for conservative policy. I believe that as a result of our extra-constitutional election law actions and accommodations, we have opened the door to a countless number of irregularities and unlawful practices that are not in harmony with the original intent of our Constitution. We must reel in the litany of extra-constitutional practices with legislation that preserves election law integrity and assures the long-term viability of our nation as a Constitutional Republic. We are a Christian nation guided by the bylaws of our Constitution and the principles found in God’s Word. The lawless activity must not stand.

A Citizens Primary Responsibility

Obedience is the glue that holds our society together. We have restraints and the checks and balances needed in our Bible, our Constitution, and the rule of law for those emotions and acts that lead to unacceptable behavior in the eyes of God. His expectations for the way that we walk out our faith and our citizenship are very high indeed.

I believe that obedience is the great equalizer in our form of government (Constitutional Republic) that sets the table for equality among its citizenry. Obedience to God and our Constitution will generate enthusiasm in both the ecclesiastical and political realms that will bolster the conditions necessary for our very survival. Obedience in both realms guarantees an enduring commitment to the moral and virtuous nature of our Republic that our Founding Fathers said necessary to the newly crafted Constitution. When we do obey, it fosters and enshrines a complementary and supportive function of church and state, never to be separated. Yes, different roles and responsibilities to be sure, but bound by the convergence and need to undergird our nation with the principles of God's moral law in both.

When asked, "What form of government have you bequeathed us Mr. Franklin", he responded, "A Republic Madame, if you can keep it." Benjamin Franklin was expressing an opinion to the very nature of its survival-obedience. He knew that if we had the discipline to work and keep its bylaws, our Constitution will be there over the long-haul. He also knew that the sincere desires of religious behavior would also help spawn the conditions of patriotism. For example, he would print all of the sermons of his friend George Whitefield (Evangelist during the Great Awakening) in the

A CITIZENS PRIMARY RESPONSIBILITY

Pennsylvania Gazette (Franklin was co-owner) to incite a religious fervor that he knew would benefit our country.

For those of you chomping at the bit to express outrage at my conclusion to obey because of the evil currently embedded in our system of government, hold on to your shorts. We never support or condone evil and we do not remain silent. In our eyes, the evil machinations of mankind are a bridge too far. We obey God rather than men!

Making Sense of it All

The circumstances surrounding our government right now will be played out on that God-given stage of Divine providence and intervention. We should not be dismayed or disillusioned with current events. They are to be expected. We know that in the end God and His church will prevail victorious! We also know that the conditions of humanity will worsen before we experience that victory. We should simply plan accordingly and execute those things found in His Word that we know are His expectations, principles, and/or mandates. Silence is not an option. It wasn't an option for the nation of Israel under Egyptian dominance and control, and it's not an option for Christians today. Where are we now and where are we headed?

As Joe Biden took the oath of office on January 20th, 2021, and took absolute power with the transition from one president to himself, I couldn't help but anticipate the ensuing policy positions that we will be faced with as a nation. No doubt, these policy positions will move us toward a more secularized society by:

1. Furthering the divide between church and state
2. Limiting the enforcement of our laws
3. Encroaching our national sovereignty with minimal border security (if any)
 - a) Fostering mass illegal alien activity

b) Increasing the high cost of support to harbor these lawbreakers (illegal aliens)

c) Putting American workers out of business or employment

d) Lowering the wage of American workers

e) Increasing U.S. vulnerability to terrorist attacks by welcoming everyone with limited or no oversight

f) Increasing the cost of education (schools overrun with illegal aliens)

g) Lowering our dominance as a world power to that of “equal partner” status

4. Enhancing secular humanist indoctrination and propaganda in our public schools

5. Supporting censorship, secular humanist narratives and worldview perspective, and ongoing manipulation by big tech and mainstream media

6. Crushing our economy with excessive regulation (administrative deep state) and taxation (tax and spend)

7. Using major health concerns (such as Covid-19) to implement full-blown socialism/communism on our shores

8. Dismantling our unalienable rights found in our Constitution and Bill of Rights

9. Weakening our military

10. Raising our national debt to unmanageable and “bubble” like proportions

11. Slowing to a grinding halt the progression of our fossil fuel capability

After the initial shock of trying to make sense of it all (the above is only a small sampling), I go to the Bible and search the scripture for answers to basic

biblical truths.

- All things work together for good
- God is sovereign
- God sets kings up and takes them down
- God uses all of humanity to bring glory to himself by orchestrating past, present, and future events for His ultimate victory (Divine control and orchestration)

Yes, God has even allowed the Joe Biden presidency for His ultimate ends. While it makes me very uneasy (sick) in the flesh, it is biblical truth.

However, I then look to an example in the Bible that reflects the governance and policy positions of a seemingly righteous and God-centered leader as contrast and juxtaposition. He, too, used the conditions of a major crisis to usher in austere policy positions (I am anticipating that Biden will do the same) that dominated, controlled and subordinated the citizenry and their neighbors. His name was Joseph.

At the time of this historical and biblical account in Egypt, there was an unprecedented famine in the land that precipitated the falling value of money. The citizens in Egypt and the surrounding nations were fighting for their very survival. Food and “good” money were in scarce supply. Joseph used this crisis for two very different ends. First, he devised a mechanism by which he could feed the citizens and meet their basic needs. On its face, this seemed to be a very good gesture and a concern for the citizens. Remember, Joseph, interpreted Pharaoh’s dream (relating to 7 years of abundance and 7 years of famine) and was assigned the task of storing up the grain and getting ready for the famine as Egypt’s second in command. Second, I believe that Joseph took advantage of the situation to institute controls that would guarantee absolute subjection to Pharaoh’s rule.

- Joseph gathered up all the money that was found in the land (Genesis 47:14)
- Joseph bartered horses, flocks, asses, herds, and cattle for food (Genesis

47:17)

- Joseph bartered the citizen's land for food (Genesis 47:19,20)
- Joseph bartered indentured servanthship for food (Genesis 47:19,20)
- Joseph relocated the indentured servants to designated cities (Genesis 47:21)
- Joseph forced the indentured servants to be husbandmen of the land (Genesis 47:23)
- Joseph forced the husbandmen to pay a 20 percent tax back to Pharaoh (Genesis 47:26)

While we can certainly argue about the nature of the “willingness” of the citizens to accept the conditions (Genesis 47:25) and Joseph's ultimate motivation, we cannot argue that the conditions by which Joseph ruled would be out of bounds by today's standards. I do not think that the latter would be in dispute. We also know that God used the famine event and the oversight of the event (good, bad, and ugly) for good and His Divine purposes. In this account, we also must make sure that we do not lose sight of the fact that Joseph also took care of his family (Genesis 47:27) much differently, and as a result, the nation of Israel “multiplied exceedingly.” One can only imagine the animosity that must have developed over time between the native Egyptian population (now indentured servants) against the well-taken-care-of and provided for (thank you, Joseph, for your hospitality) nation of Israel.

With this specific event and all of the conditions present, I believe that God used it to harden the hearts of the Egyptians toward the nation of Israel over time. Decades and generations later, when the new king arose to power, he saw the unequal conditions that existed between the native Egyptians and Israel and made broad sweeping changes. The new king moved to reverse those conditions and demanded “forced labor” from the nation of Israel. That trend continued for over 400 years. Well, we know the outcome. Ultimately, God saw fit (he heard their cries) for Israel to leave Egypt for the greener pastures of the Promised Land! Amen!

In conclusion, we need to be cognizant (have a God-consciousness) and thankful that a Sovereign Lord reigns over all of us. His exhaustive roadmap

(the Bible) outlines the perfect response for any occasion in the realms and earthly manifestations of society and governance. Yes, politics included!

Will you occupy until He comes? Will you be the salt and light necessary? Will you participate in redeeming the time because the days are evil? Will you rise to the occasion with the wisdom and insight from above?

The Last Stand

That, as a republic is the best of governments, so that particular arrangements of the powers of society, or, in other words, that form of government which is best contrived to secure an impartial and exact execution of the laws, is the best of republics. -John Adams

There are only two institutions left in America that have the capability of safeguarding our Constitutional Republic. Fortunately, they are both deeply rooted in the very soul and fabric of our nation. All other earthly manifestations have been infiltrated and subsequently taken over by the secular humanists and anti-God faction in America who propose to transform the fundamental elements (pillars) of our great country and do us much harm. I sincerely believe that we have a domestic enemy among us readying their lunge forward to devour her prey. That prey is the conservative patriots in America who want to protect and defend both the U.S. Constitution and the inspired Word of God.

The institutions in America that make up her greatness have been coopted and hijacked for purposes not consistent with our Framers' ideals. For example, education, branches of government (elected officials), governmental agencies and their auxiliaries (unelected officials), the economy, arts & entertainment, athletics, healthcare institutions, corporations, environmental organizations, and our legal system are all now controlled by the thinking of a dominant state-sponsored church and national religion in America,

called SECULARISM. Yes, we have a pervasive government presence in our institutions all across this continent.

The two manifestations left that will keep us safe are the church and our military. First, while the enemy has tried to infiltrate God's church, they will never be able to control and dominant God's church. His church is here to stay because no one can control the liberty of conscience found in religious freedom. They may be able to bust down the physical structures (church buildings) and disperse the religious adherents, however, they will never be able to control our spirits and the body comprised of those spirits. Second, and for similar reasons, they will never be able to control our military institutions. I believe that the ingrained nature of our chaplaincy program has allowed a microcosm view of what the fusion of church and state looks like. That is to say, the compatibility found between our military (the state) and our faith-based institutions (the church) is a tie that has been around for centuries. There is such a love and appreciation for the chaplaincy programs by our military personnel, that it would seem highly unlikely (outside of the sovereign will of God) that the bonds of unity between church and state could be broken in this regard.

I am not saying that the secular humanists among us have not tried to end the relationship. They certainly have done so. They have repeatedly tried to use man-made reasoning and logic (lawsuits) to squash the relationship between church and state. However, both the court system and the military authorities continue to support the necessity of the chaplaincy program as a vital component of our military readiness levels.

For example, let's read an excerpt from the opinion rendered in Katcoff v. Marsh. The Circuit Judge, Mansfield, had this to say:

"We find that the more appropriate standard of relevancy to our national defense and reasonable necessity is met by the great majority of the Army's existing chaplaincy activities. The purpose and effect of the program is to make religion, religious education, counseling, and religious facilities available to military personnel and their families under circumstances

where the practice of religion would otherwise be denied as a practical matter to all or a substantial number. As a result, the morale of our soldiers, their willingness to serve, and the efficiency of the Army as an instrument of our national defense rests in substantial part on the military chaplaincy, which is vital to our Army's functioning."

In another lawsuit with a different set of circumstances, District Judge, Sporkin, had this to say in his conclusion supporting the actions of a chaplain.

"What we have here is the government's attempt to override the Constitution and the laws of the land by a directive that interferes with military chaplains' free exercise and free speech rights, as well as those of their congregants. On its face, this is a drastic action and can be sanctioned only by compelling circumstances. The government has not met its burden. The 'speech' that the plaintiffs intend to employ to inform their congregants of their religious obligations has nothing to do with their role in the military. They are neither being disrespectful to the Armed Forces nor in any way urging their congregants to defy military orders. The chaplains in this case seek to preach only what they would tell their non-military congregants. There is no need for heavy-handed censorship, and any attempt to impinge on the plaintiff's constitutional and legal rights is not acceptable."

The Supreme Court has stood firm on the rights of each, notwithstanding, the tension created by the opposing and dissenting opinions. We are so fortunate to have the mighty power of God establish a beachhead in both our churches and our military. One, established to help usher in the spirit of new beginnings, while the other established as a vanguard to protect and defend the sacred nature of the American experience. These two institutions are a most formidable combination! I am proud of my faith and I am proud of our military!

Conclusion

We hope that the articles in this book have inspired you toward Conservatism and civic involvement. It is vital to the future of our country that our citizens remain not just engaged in, but also passionate about, our government and political processes. May we teach each generation that comes after us to love our nation the way we do. We hope that the frustration and desire for change spurs you on to new heights in your study of the Constitution, our Republic, and the framework that makes America great.

Do not be discouraged friends. It is not too late to institute a correction back to the principles upon which we were founded. It will take much effort, much focus and much involvement, but we can course-correct. We must be united in effort, clear in strategy and one in purpose. Let us not lose heart nor lose focus. We must have the foresight and knowledge to combat the forces of darkness that seek to snuff out America's shining light. They will not back down, so we must not either. Remember: "The only thing necessary for evil to triumph, is for good men to do nothing".

Afterword

In this book, and the ones to come, we are hashing out ideas for what a better tomorrow looks like. It is ever a work in progress, never completely wrapped up into a hard conclusion. As we continue to develop our ideas, we work them into a process, and spur our readers on to pursue involvement at the local and national levels. We hope you will provide feedback, start a conversation with us and with others, and seek opportunities to be involved in your community. Educate others, start initiatives, and stay involved. We need conservative leaders. If you would like ideas on how to stay involved, reach out to us. Stay tuned for our next books.

About the Editor/Designer

Sarah Wallace is an entrepreneur, owning her own web design business, and is self-employed as a real estate agent in the beautiful Lowcountry of South Carolina. A student of political science and former intern with Senator Jim DeMint and The Heritage Foundation, she has a passion for conveying civic concepts to young people. *Convergence* is her first published book, and hopefully just the beginning of more to come. She enjoys writing, designing, and traveling.



About the Author

Michael J. LaPierre has written 5 previous books, on the topics of leadership, Christianity, and civic responsibility. He is the founder of the Christian Leadership Worldview Institute and spends his time traveling and speaking to businesses, schools, churches, and other groups to spread the message of responsible involvement as Christians in the workplace, education, and church environments. This book, his 6th, follows those trends of involving oneself in government with a Christian worldview through which we view the world and ourselves. He is an entrepreneur and retired businessman and lives in the Midlands of South Carolina with his wife Calie.

You can connect with me on:

 <https://www.amazon.com/michaeljlapierre>

 <https://www.twitter.com/lapierre4senate>

 <https://www.facebook.com/lapierreforsenate>

Subscribe to my newsletter:

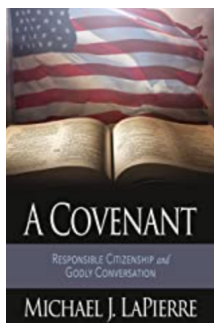
 <http://www.convergencebook.online>

Also by Michael J. LaPierre

Michael J LaPierre is a business executive who specializes in Christian leadership training and development. Mike had the privilege over a 32 year career to work with top tier companies spanning a range from Fortune 50 to Fortune 500 organizations.

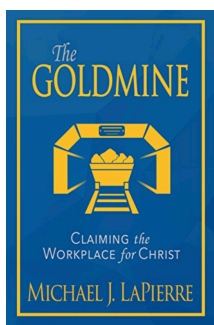
A former minor league baseball player, his executive experiences include VP Sales, Director of Sales & Marketing, Director Global Sales Strategy, entrepreneur, church servant/deacon, and community leader. His diverse executive background and nonprofit experiences have allowed him to gain a comprehensive understanding of the principles of leadership development. Those broad experiences include leadership positions with UPS, Arnold Industries, Lily Transportation, and Roadway Express. He is the founder and current President of Christian Leadership Worldview International (clwi.org).

Mike's passion is to see organizational leaders embrace and live out a Christian leadership worldview. He addresses the needs of leaders in venues such as seminars, keynote addresses, devotionals/chapel, workshops, mentoring, and motivational speaking. He is a Brown University graduate who recently received his MBA from Clemson University with Magna Cum Laude honors. He resides with his wife in Pickens, South Carolina.



A Covenant: Responsible Citizenship and Godly Conversation

The time has come for Christian leaders to submit to the authority of Jesus Christ relating to our public discourse, civic responsibility, and governance. The praxis of political theology fundamentally supports a Christian leadership worldview. We must have both clarity of vision from a saving faith found in His Word along with the necessary actions to impact the culture for His Kingdom. Outside of Christ and His church, there is no other organizational construct (government) on this earth that can further hinder our spiritual progress if left to its own device.

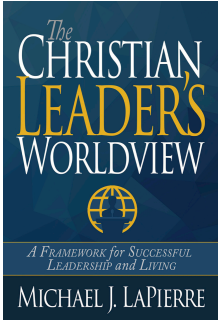


The Goldmine: Claiming the Workplace for Christ

How do we leave a lasting spiritual legacy and bring a higher level of spiritual sensitivity and awareness, while redeeming the time in our workplace endeavors?

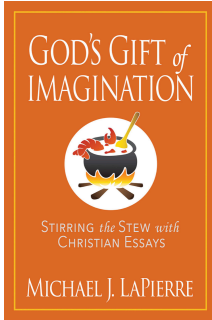
The Goldmine provides a comprehensive overview of our Christian responsibilities while providing timeless Bible principles that will help us navigate the workplace for the glory of God. Our workplace – a primary spiritual realm and cultural manifestation – is one that the Lord uses as a testing and proving ground for our Christian development and maturity.

Our time at work should begin and end with a God-centered focus so that we can impact our co-workers and the culture for Christ. Read this book and get a renewed perspective of what it means to live out your Christian faith while at work in the 21st century.



The Christian Leader's Worldview: A Framework for Successful Leadership and Living

What does it mean to have a Christian leadership worldview in the 21st century? As Christian leaders, our challenge is to plan, think, act, and lead in ways that glorify our risen Savior and to protect the legitimacy of our Christian testimonies and legacies. The Christian Leader's Worldview provides Bible-based principles and practical guidance to help you to make an eternal impact through your life and leadership. The lens from which this book is written is purposefully varied to include leadership topics relating to business professionals, organizational behavior, team sports, popular culture, the family, and more. This book offers a leadership framework that is useful for personal growth, mentoring, and organizational performance. Read this book as a next step toward viewing the world and those you lead through a Christ-centered perspective.



God's Gift of Imagination: Stirring the Stew with Christian Essays

Are you willing to take great leaps of faith and allow the Lord to stretch you beyond all earthly imagination?

If your answer to that question is a resounding yes, then this book will challenge your thinking and help you grow in your walk with the Lord. This book is designed to make Christians think and **SERIOUSLY** ponder the spiritual and cultural issues in unique and innovative ways.

With a Christian Leadership Worldview, we are challenged to use both the left and right sides of our brains. The left side is used for diligently processing terabytes of information that passes our way with the filter of God's Word by thinking logically and sequentially through every detail. The right side is used with God's Gift of Imagination to survey the vast and imaginative depths of His wisdom and applying it in everyday living.

Won't you begin today and think through all of the issues that impact the body, mind, and soul for the glory of God?

